THE

FOUNTAIN-HEAD OF RELIGION

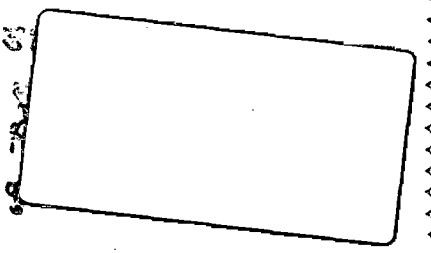
BEING

A Comparative Study of the Principal Religions of the World and a Manifestation of their Common Origin from the Vedas

BY

GANGA PRASAD, M.A., M.R.A.S.,

of the Provincial Civil Service, U. P. of Agra & Oudh, late Professor of English and Logic, Meerut College.



PUBLISHED BY

THE ARYA PRATINIDHI SABHA, U. P.

1916.

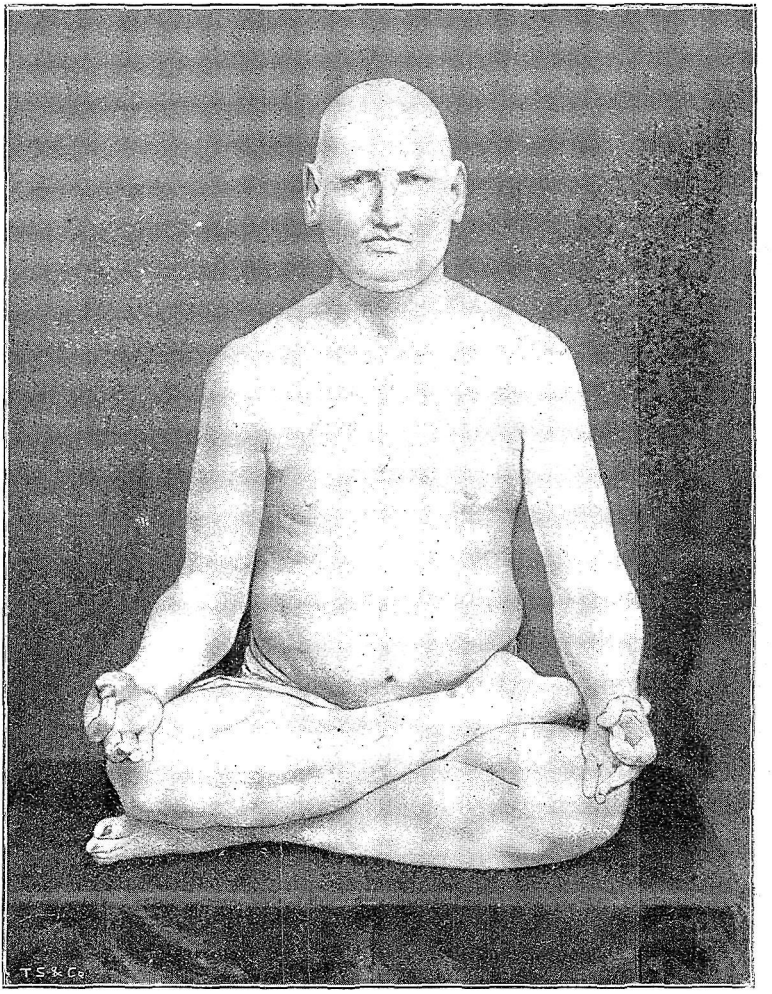
Third Edition

Price Re 1/=

Printed at the Star Press, Allahabad.

ओ३म्

THE FOUNDER OF THE ARYA-SAMAJ



SWAMI DAYANANDA SARASWATI.

"यह निश्चय है कि जितनी विद्या और मत भूगोल में फैले हैं वे सब आर्य्यावर्त्त देश ही से प्रचरित हुए हैं।" (सत्यार्थप्रकाश, पृष्ठ २७६)

"It is certain that all sciences and religions which have spread in the world, have been disseminated from the country of Aryavarta."—(*Satyartha Prakasha*, p. 276.)

Star Press, Allahabad.

PREFACE TO THE FIRST EDITION.

THE materials for this book were collected and its first four chapters were also written over ten years ago. The book remained incomplete chiefly through want of leisure. At the request of some friends I completed it about three years ago, and it appeared by instalments in the *Vedic Magazine* of Gurukul Kangri, Hardwar. It is now being published in its present form. I wish I could rewrite the first four chapters; but want of leisure has rendered this impossible; nor have I been able to do much in the way of revising them.

The book does not pretend to be an original work. Indeed there is hardly anything in it which I can call my own. It is full of quotations from the Zend Avesta, the Bible, the Koran and many other books of different religions. A justification for this will be found in the nature of the subject treated of, and in the mode of enquiry adopted. In establishing a relationship between two religions by showing community of ideas between them one must adduce as many instances of similarity as one can. In fact the larger the number of similarities, the stronger and more convincing is the argument. The book also abounds with extracts from other authors. The reason is not far to seek. My own opinion on some of the points would have been too singular—rather presumptuous. Had it not been for this I should not have inflicted so many extracts and quotations on the reader.

In comparing the different religions of the world I have freely availed myself of what information on the subject was within my reach. In tracing Mahomedanism to Judaism I have mainly followed Dr. Sales to whom my acknowledgments are due on almost every page of Chapter I. In showing the influence of Buddhism on Christianity I have chiefly drawn on Mr. R. C. Dutt's *Civilisation in Ancient India*. But in tracing Judaism to Zoroastrianism and the latter to Vedism I have been less dependent on any particular authority.

In the last chapter while comparing Zoroastrianism and Vedism, I have taken the liberty to explain at some length the Vedic teaching on some of the points which have fallen under my notice. This is one reason why that chapter is comparatively so lengthy.

The object of this treatise, as the reader will see, is not to criticize any particular religion or religions, but to show the relationship existing among them all by disclosing their common origin from the Vedic teaching.

In the end I only crave the reader's indulgence for any mistakes or omissions which might have crept into the book.

3rd February, 1909. G. P.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

I feel gratified with the reception accorded to the book by the public. All but a few copies of the first edition were sold within a year of its publication. There has been some delay in bringing out the second edition. I have made only a few alterations or additions. An exhaustive alphabetical index has been added besides a copious table of contents which appears at the beginning of the book. It is hoped that they will be found useful.

The book has been reviewed by a number of religious and other papers. Some extracts from these reviews will be found at the end of the book. As might have been expected, it has been criticised by several papers. A personal friend under the *nom de plume* of "A lover of truth," has contributed a series of articles under the heading "Thoughts on the Fountain-head of Religion," to the *Muslim Review*, Allahabad. Seven articles have already appeared; but the series is not yet complete. Apart from this, it would not be possible to attempt anything like a reply to all these articles within the short space at my disposal in this Preface. I have replied to two of them headed "Is the Universe created out of something?" and "The theory of creation," (which appeared in the *Muslim Review* of December 1910, and April 1911, respectively) in the columns of the *Vedic Magazine*. My friend, B. Ghasi Ram, M. A., LL. B., of Meerut has, in the *Vedic Magazine* of ASARH 1968, replied to the

article on the "Interpretation of the Vedas" (published in the *Muslim Review* for January 1911), which had little or nothing to do with the subject of this book, but was a general attack on the position of the Arya Samaj with respect to Swami Dayananda Saraswati's interpretation of the Vedas. In three articles the "Lover of Truth" has laboured to show that Buddhism is different from Hinduism. If it were not so, it would not be a distinct religion that it is. But this does not necessarily mean that its main principles were not derived from the Vedas. The writer has not yet dealt with chapters I and IV of the book which treat of the Judaic origin of Mahomedanism, and Zorcastrian origin of Judaism, and which as a Mahomedan he might have perhaps been expected first to handle.

A very fair criticism is what appeared in the well-known Christian weekly of Calcutta, the *Epiphany* of 2nd April 1910. I am indebted to the writer for having pointed out one or two minor inaccuracies; *e.g.*, I said on p. 40 of the 1st edition that Abraham was "a native of Haran," whereas the writer has pointed out that "Abraham's native home was in Ur and that he only settled for a time in Haran." I have corrected the error. But it does not in the least affect my argument. For whether Abraham was born or temporarily settled in Haran, he had opportunities of exchanging ideas with Zarathustra, if Haran and Arran (the birthplace of Zarathustra) are identical.

The gist of the criticism is contained in the following sentence. "The connection on the Semite side of both Christianity and Islam with Judaism is patent and well-known; so on the Aryan side is that of Buddhism and Zoroastrianism with Vedism; but the cross connection between Christianity and Buddhism and between Judaism and Zoroastrianism are much more difficult to establish." I recognise the force of these remarks. As I have tried to show, Christianity is mainly based on Judaism, and only partly on Buddhism. Its dogmas are all derived from Judaism, and it is only its precepts for which it is indebted to Buddhism. I admit that the connection between Judaism and Zoroastrianism is the most important like in the chain of my argument, and the most difficult to prove. Whether I have or have not succeeded in proving it, I must leave it to the reader to decide. The writer in the *Epiphany* perhaps thinks that I have based my conclusions on minor points of similarities, and sometimes on what he is pleased to call "unauthorised accretions." It is true that I have spoken of some minor points. But I have also shown that the Judaic conception of *God* together with some of His important names, the idea of two opposite powers, *viz.*, *God* and the *Devil*, the notion of *angels* with their names and offices, the Jewish theory of *cosmogony*, the *Resurrection*, the ideas about *future life*, *heaven* and *hell*,—can all be traced to Zoroastrianism. If all these *essential* doctrines

can be shown to have been derived from Zoroastrianism, what would there be left in Judaism for which it can claim an independent origin?

The writer in the *Epiphany* has misunderstood my argument in connection with Sargon and Moses, (pp. 70-71, or 51-52 of the first edition). The point is not whether the Semites borrowed the story from the Zoroastrians or *vice versa*. In fact, the story does not occur in Zoroastrian books. What I have sought to prove is that possibly Moses never existed, that the account of Moses is derived from the story of King Sargon, that according to this view, the Pentateuch could not have been written by Moses but by Ezra in 450 B. C. after the Jews had been liberated by the Persian King Cyrus from their captivity, and had thus had ample opportunities of being influenced by the Zoroastrians in their religion. *It is thus quite immaterial whether* Sargon and the Akkads were Aryans or Semites.

The writer in the *Epiphany* has, in a way, admitted about the end of his criticism that the Vedas probably contain a part of the Divine Revelation. He says: "From the beginning of the human race *God has been seeking to reveal Himself to man, in* nature, in conscience, in inspiration, and what wonder that in many races, men have been found who could partially receive and transmit that Revelation. The truths of God are unchanging and eternal, and the Revelation, in so far as it is accurately transmitted, must be identical every

where. * * * * * We may well suppose that God cherished the germs of spiritual understanding and sought to develop a chosen race in India too, but. He found the clearer spiritual intuition or perhaps the greater faithfulness to that intuition among the Hebrew people and therefore among their descendants."

Of the *Parsi* papers, the *Jam-e- Jamshaid* and the *Sanjh Bartman*, a daily of Bombay (*vide* issue of 1st September 1910) have reviewed the book. The latter remarks: "We...wonder why Mr. Ganga Prasad summarily drives out the theory that the language and religion of the Vedas are obliged to Zarathushtra for their existence." I think I have adduced sufficient evidence to prove that the Vedas are much older than the Zend Avesta and that the theory referred to is quite untenable and has, in fact, never been advanced by any scholar. I have mentioned it as only a possible theory. Even the internal evidence of the Zend Avesta itself is against it (*vide* pp. 159-160).

14*th June*, 1911. GANGA PRASAD.

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION.

The second edition of the book was exhausted sometime ago. A few more reviews have appeared since that edition was published. Among them are the opinions of the late Dr. Satish Chandra Banerji, Dr. Rash Behari Ghosh, and Sir Gooroo Das Banerji, which appear with the extract from Press Opinions at the end of the book. The series of articles criticising the book contributed to the *Muslim Review* of Allahabad by my friend Mr. A. A. Zakaullah Khan, M. A. under the *nom de plume* "Lover of Truth," which was incomplete when the second edition was printed, has since then been completed and printed separately in the form of a book entitled "Some Vedic principles as reviewed by a Muslim." My replies to all these articles appeared in the *Vedic Magazine*, and have now been added as Appendices I-IV to the present edition.

The only other criticism of the book which has come to my notice since the last edition is that contained in three articles of one Mr. J. R. Roy, which appeared in the "*Indian Witness*," (a Christian weekly paper of Lucknow) in the issues of September 10, 17, and 24, 1914. A brief reply to these articles will be found in the Appendix V.

AGRA,
16th Septr, 1916.

GANGA PRASAD.

REFERENCES.

1 Rig Veda
2 Yajur Veda
3 Atharva Veda
4 Shatapatha Brahmana
5 Taittiriya Upanishad
6 Mundaka Upanishad
7 Kaivalya Upanishad
8 Katha Upanishad
9 Nighantu
10 Nirukta
11 Panini Ashtadhyayi
12 Amara Kosha
13 Yoga Sutras
14 Nyaya Sutras
15 Manu Smriti
16 Bhagwad Cita
17 Sattyartha Parkasha, by S. Dayananda Saraswati
18 Rig Vedadi Bhashya Bhumika, by S. Dayananda Saraswati.
19 Terminology of the Vedas and European Scholars, by Pandit Guru Datta, M.A.
20 Prof. Darmesteter's and Rev. L. H. Mills' Translation of the Zend Avesta.
21 The Bible.
22 Sale's Koran.
23 Chips from a German Workshop, by Max Muller.
24 Gifford Lectures. by Max Muller.
25 India : What can it teach us ? by Max Muller.
26 Lectures on the Science of Language, by Max Muller.
27 Indian Wisdom, by Monier Williams.
28 Teachings of Zoroaster and the Philosophy of the Parsi Religion, by Kapadia.
29 The part taken by the Parsi Religion in the formation of Christianity and Judaism: Translated from the German of Dr Kohut, Bombay Fort Printing Press.
30 Zoroastrianism in the light of Theosophy, by Nasarvanji F. Belmoria .
31 Vedic Hinduism, by Mr. J. Murdoch.
32 Evolution of the Idea of God, by Grant Allen.
33 Theism, by Dr. Flint.
34 Isis Unveiled, by M. Blavatsky.
35 Secret Doctrine, by M. Blavatsky.
36 Historia Naturalis, by Pliny.
37 Civilization in Ancient India by R. C. Dutt
38 Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings and Religion of the Parsis, by Martin Haug, Ph. D.
39 Pahalve Texts: Translation by E. W. West, Ph. D.
40 Dalayal-ul-Mashaik, by M, Debi Pershad.

CONTENTS.

Chapter V,

CONTENTS.

INTRODUCTION.

Divine Origin of Religion.

What is the *Origin of Religion*—the origin not of this or that particular religion, but of religion in general of which the various religious systems are only different manifestations? Broadly speaking there are two answers to this question, *viz.*, (1) that religion is of *divine* origin, and (2) that it is of *human* origin. The former view does not ignore the obvious fact that finite minds, national history, and even the geographical features of a country, have played important parts in the growth and development of the existing religions. It only insists that the *ultimate* source of Religion is God.

This treatise does not profess to aim at an exhaustive treatment of this difficult and important problem. Its object is to show by a comparative study of the principal religions of the world that the newer religions can be traced to older ones, these latter to still older ones, and so on, till we reach the most ancient and primitive religion of humanity. A comparative study of religions will show that there has never been any real invention in the realm of religion, that the main principles which constitute its essence are as old as the human race, and that these considerations warrant the conclusion that the germs of religious knowledge were vouchsafed by God to man in the beginning of this creation. These germs are to be found in the *Vedas* which are admittedly the oldest books in the library of mankind.

No theist will deny that God is in a sense the primary source of *all knowledge*. But this is true of *religious knowledge* in a special sense. Speaking of our idea of *God*, Descartes, the Father of Modern Philosophy, observes to the following effect : "The more I think, the more deeply am I convinced that this conception could not have been created by my own mind. God is infinite ; my mind is finite. God is absolute ; my mind is relative ; and so on. It is, therefore, clear that I am not the originator of this idea. It must have been stamped upon my mind by God himself." That there is much truth in these observations will be evident from the fact that our knowledge of God, His nature and attributes, is, in an important sense, unlike every other knowledge, unchanging and unprogressive. We know God to be just, good, and merciful, all-wise and all-powerful, infinite and absolute, and so on. But there was never a time when any of these attributes was unknown to man. The earliest *Rishis* prayed to and contemplated God as possessing these attributes. And what more can the modern philosopher or theologian boast of? Our knowledge of other things has been progressing by leaps and bounds; but our knowledge about the Deity has stood still. And it may be safely asserted that ages may roll away—science may go on progressing by greater strides than it has hitherto done—we may make more and more wonderful discoveries in the realm of matter - yet there will never come a time when man will be able to know any *new* truth about God. We may have a better apprehension and a more thorough realization of the divine nature, but we shall never be able to discover a new attribute of God. Why? Because the knowledge of God has not been *originated* by the human mind."

What has been said here about our knowledge of God holds true of all *religious knowledge*. There never has been, there never shall be, any real invention in the sphere of religion. H. P. Blavatsky truly observes :—

"More than one great scholar has stated that there never was a religious founder, whether Aryan, Semitic, or Turanian who had *invented* a new religion, or revealed a new truth. These founders are all *transmitters*, not original teachers.....Therefore is Confucius.....shown by Dr. Legge, who calls him 'emphatically a *transmitter*, not a maker,' as saying:—'I only hand on; I cannot create new things. I believe in the ancients and therefore I love them'.—(Quoted in *Science of Religion* by Max Muller.)"*

Professor Max Muller also says :—"There has been no entirely new religion since the beginning of the world."†

From these considerations we hold that the only satisfactory way of accounting for the origin of religious knowledge in this world is to refer it to the Deity. In other words, religion is ultimately of divine origin.

It may be asked :—'Are then all the systems of religion equally divine? Are all the conflicting religions of the world equally true?' Our answer is both in the affirmative and the negative. As these religions exist at present, they contain a mixture of both truth which is *divine*, and of error which is *human*. But a careful comparison shows that in their essence they can all be traced ultimately to the Vedas. They differ from one another on many

Secret Doctrine, Vol. I, Introduction, pp. xxxvi-vii.

†*Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I, Preface, p. x.

points; but there are also truths and principles which are common to all or most of them. These common truths and principles are ultimately derived from the Vedas.* And even those points on which they seem so widely to differ, will generally be found to be the same at bottom, the apparent difference being due to a misconception or misconstruction of the long-forgotten truth of the Vedas on which they are ultimately founded.

We shall now proceed to show that the Vedas are the ultimate source of all religion,—the fountain-head from which the stream of religious knowledge has flowed through the channels of Zoroastrianism, Judaism, Buddhism, Christianity, and Mahomedanism. We can take into consideration only the five great religions named above. The other religions of the world are generally founded on one or more of them. Jainism,† for example, is only another form of Buddhism. The systems of Kabir, Nanak and

* Compare Swami Dayananda Saraswati's *Sattyartha Prakasha*, p. 382—

जिस बात में ये सहस्र एकमत हों वह वेदमत ग्राह्य है और जिसमें परस्पर विरोध हो वह कल्पित, झूँठा, अधर्म, अग्राह्य है

"Every point on which these thousand (existing religions) are unanimous is the religion of the Vedas and is to be accepted. That on which they contradict each other is artificial, false, contrary to religion, and is to be discarded."

† Jainism differs but slightly from Buddhism. The cardinal principles of the two religions are the same. But as to the relation between them there is much difference of opinion among scholars. According to some, Jainism is an offshoot from Buddhism; others think that it is co-eval with that religion, owing its existence to similar causes operating at the same historical period. Even if we accept this latter view, the precepts of Jainism can be traced to the Vedas in the same manner as those of Buddhism.

Dadu are based chiefly upon Hinduism, and partly on Mahomedanism; Brahmoism is the child of Hinduism and Christianity; and so on, with other minor religions.

And how did these different religions come into existence? A comparative study of religions shows us that whenever any important truth of Religion was suppressed by the selfishness of the priestly class, or lost sight of through the ignorance of masses, there appeared some great man who emphasised that truth, removed the dross which had hidden or partially obscured it, and made it shine in its former lustre. In this way every new religion was in its beginning an attempt to reform the older religion as it then existed and a protest against its abuses. We shall thus show that when the Vedic theism was giving place to a polytheistic belief in many gods, there arose Spitama Zarathushtra who preached the worship of one God, *Ahura*, and denounced the worship of *devas*. Similarly, when later on the religion of the Vedas had degenerated into a blind observance of meaningless rites involving thoughtless butchery of innocent animals and the equality of all men in religion had been replaced by the iniquitous distinction of castes, there appeared Gautam Buddha who raised his potent voice for purity of life, and made a stirring appeal on behalf of the down-trodden Shudras and the dumb animals. As Buddha strove to reform the Vedism of his time, Jesus Christ endeavoured to purify Judaism. And when Christianity had also degenerated into idolatry and superstition, Mahomed came to preach his austere monotheism. The same was the case with the so-called founders of other religions. For example, in our own country Kabir, Nanak, Dadu, Chaitanya, were all reformers whose object it was to purge the

degenerate Hinduism of their times, of its latter-day superstition, idolatry and polytheism. Thus all great religious teachers (call them *prophets* if you like)—were originally reformers. All of them strove to do good in their own way, and tried to improve on the existing religions. But none of them could excel the excellent purity of the primitive religion of the *Vedas*.

NOTE ON THE CHRONOLOGY OF THE SIX GREAT RELIGIONS:

Mahomedanism, Christianity, Buddhism, Judaism, Zoroastrianism and Vedism.

THE reader need hardly be told that the religions named above are arranged chronologically. That Buddhism, for example, is older than Christianity, and Christianity older than Mahomedanism, is known to everybody. It is equally certain that Vedism is older than Zoroastrianism, and Zoroastrianism older than Judaism. But the fact is not equally well-known, and it will not, therefore, be out of place to say a word or two about the relative antiquity of these three religions.

According to the Bible, Moses, the reputed author of *Pentateuch*, was born in 1571 B.C., and received divine mission in 1491. Thus the oldest books of the Jews do not claim a higher antiquity than 1491 B.C. And if we deny the Mosaic authorship of *Pentateuch*, we must accept the other theory that it was compiled by Ezra only 450 B.C.*

The Zend Avesta, on the other hand is much older. According to Dr. Spiegel, Zoroaster was a contemporary of Abraham, who lived in 1900 B.C., that is, more than 400 years before Moses. "Pliny, a celebrated Roman Historian of the first century," says Dr. Haug, "goes much farther in stating that Zoroaster lived several thousand years before Moses

*See Chapter IV, § 2, *Infra*.

(*Historia Naturalis*, xxx: 2)."* Dr. Haug continues. "Berosos, the Babylonian Historian, makes him a king of the Babylonians, and founder of the dynasty *which reigned over Babylon between* B.C. 2200 and B.C. 2000." While speaking of the sacred scriptures of the Parsis, Dr. Haug elsewhere observes: "The composition of the sacred literature of the Jews from the time of Moses (B.C. 1300 to 1500) down to the close of the Talmudic literature (A.D. 960), occupied a period of about 2,400 years. Were we to apply the same calculation to the Zoroastrian literature, its beginning would have to be placed as early as B.C 2800, which would not in the least contradict the statements made by the Greeks about the age in which the founder, of the Parsi religion was believed by them to have lived."†

The testimony of ancient Greek authors is to the same effect. "Aristotle and Eudoxus place his era as much as 6,000 years before Plato; others say about 5,000 years before the Trojan War—(*see* Pliny's *Historia Naturalis*, xxx: 1-3)."‡

The Parsis themselves claim a very high antiquity for their scriptures. But even Christians must admit that they are older than the *Pentateuch*.

Few will deny that the Vedas are older than even the Zend Avesta—older than any other existing book. Our *Rishis* believe that they were revealed in the beginning of the creation. Whatever may be thought of this view, certain it is that there are no older books in the library of mankind. Professor Max Muller admits:—

---

* *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings and Religions of the Parsis* by Martin Haug, Ph.D., late Professor of Sanskrit and Comparative Philology at the University of Munich, edited by E. W. West, Ph.D., 3rd Edition (*Trubner's Oriental Series*), p. 229

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 136.

‡ Haug's *Essays*, p. 298.

"There exists no literary relic that carries us back to a more primitive state in the history of man than the Veda."* The Rev. L. H. Mills, the learned translator of the Zend Avesta, also assigns a much more ancient date to the Vedas than to the Zend Avesta. Says he: "As it is the absence of Mithra and his colleagues who appear in the later Avesta permit us to place the Gathas (the oldest portion of the Zend Avesta)† considerably later than the oldest Riks."‡ Again he observes: "We need time to account for this change—and no short interval of time. We can, therefore, place the Gathas long after the oldest Riks."§

In this review we shall show that the five religions, Mahomedanism, Christianity, Buddhism, Judaism and Zoroastrianism can be ultimately traced to the Vedas.

---

* *Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I, p. 4.

† The parenthesis is our own.

‡ Rev. L. H. Mills' Translation of the *Zend Avesta*, Part III, Introduction, p. xxxvi.—(*Sacred Books of the East Series*, edited by Professor Max Muller.)

§ *Ibid*, p. xxxvii.

THE FOUNTAINHEAD OF RELIGION

CHAPTER I.

MAHOMEDANISM IS MAINLY BASED UPON JUDAISM.

THE religion of Mahomed is based chiefly on Judaism, and partly on Zoroastrianism on which Judaism itself is based. The first proposition is not denied by the Mahomedans themselves, who only claim that their Prophet has improved upon the Jewish religion in certain respects. A detailed comparison of the two religions would, however, show how closely Mahomed has followed the Jewish religion even on points of detail, and would lead to the conclusion that there is little or nothing important in Mahomedanism for which the Prophet could lay claim to originality or to Divine inspiration.

We shall in this branch of our enquiry follow Dr. Sale, whose preliminary discourse, appended to his celebrated translation of the Koran, contains a wealth of information on this subject.

SECTION 1.—THE ORIGIN OF THE UNIVERSE OR COSMOGONY.

The idea that this universe is the first and the last of its kind is purely a Jewish idea, and forms a distinctive feature of Judaism, and the two great religions founded upon it, *viz.*, Christianity and Mahomedanism. Again, the belief that this world was created out of nothing by a fiat of the Almighty is also borrowed from Judaism. The story of Adam

and Eve being created and placed in the garden of Eden, where they were allowed to partake of all things except the fruit of a particular tree; of their being tempted by Satan in the form of a serpent to eat of that very fruit; and of their subsequent fall from paradise is borrowed almost literally from the Jewish scriptures.

The same may be said of the existence of a higher order of beings than man, *viz.*, the *angels* who have pure and subtle bodies, created of fire, and who neither eat nor drink, nor propagate species. These angels are supposed to have various forms and offices, and the most eminent among them are Gabriel, Michael, Azrael and Israfil. "This whole doctrine concerning angels," says Dr. Sale, "Mahomed borrowed from the Jews, who learned the names and offices of those beings from the Persians, as they themselves confess.—(*Talmud Hieros and Roshhashan*)."*

The Koran teaches the existence of also an inferior class of beings called *jin* or *genii* 'created also of fire, but of a grosser fabric than angels, since they eat, drink and propagate their species and are subject to death.' "These notions," says Dr. Sale, "agree almost exactly with what the Jews write of a sort of demons called Shedim."†

Section 2.—The Destruction of the Universe and the Resurrection.

The Mahomedans believe in the immortality of the soul and think that there will be a day of resurrection when the dead will rise to receive the rewards and punishment of their actions in life

* Sale's *Koran* (Chando's Classics), Preliminary Discourse, p. 56; *vide* also Chap. IV, § 5, *infra*.

† *Ibid*, p. 57.

according to their merits and demerits. The whole of this doctrine has been taken from Judaism.

The Resurrection.—According to some writers the resurrection will be merely spiritual. The generally received opinion, however, is that both the body and the soul will be raised.* It might be asked: how will the body, which has been decomposed rise again? "But Mahomed has taken care to preserve one part of the body, whatever becomes of the rest, to serve for a basis of future edifice, or rather a leaven for the mass which is to be joined to it. For he taught that a man's body was entirely consumed by the earth, except only the bone called Al Ajb which we name the *os coccygis* or rump-bone; and that as it was the first formed in the human body, it will also remain uncorrupted till the last day, as a seed from whence the whole is to be renewed; and this, he said, would be effected by a forty days' rain which God would send, and which would cover the earth to the height of twelve cubits, and cause the bodies to sprout forth like plants. Herein also is Mahomed beholden to the Jews who say the same things of the bone *Luz* excepting that what Mahomed attributes to a great rain would be effected according to them by a dew impregnating the dust of the earth." †

Signs of the Resurrection.—The approach of the day of resurrection will be known from certain signs which are to precede it; for example:—

(*a*) The rising of the sun in the west.

(*b*) The appearance of the beast Dajjal, a monster of the most curious appearance, who would preach the truth of Islam in

*Sale's *Koran*, Prel. Dis., p. 61.

†*Ibid*, p. 61.

Arabic language. The beast in the Revelation (Luke, xxiii: 8) seems according to Dr. Sale to be responsible for this idea.

(*c*) The coming of the Mehdi.

(*d*) The blast of the trumpet called *Sur*, which will be sounded three times.

All these are more or less Jewish ideas. So is the teaching that after the Resurrection but before Judgment the resuscitated souls will have to wait for a long time under the burning heat of the sun which would descend to within a few yards of their heads.*

The Day of Judgment.—After mankind have waited for fixed time God will, at length, appear to judge them, Mahomed taking the office of intercessor. Then every one will be examined concerning all his actions in this life. Some say that all the limbs and parts of the body will be made to confess the sins committed by each. Each person will be given a book in which all his actions are recorded. These books will be weighed in a balance to be held by Gabriel. Those whose good actions are heavier than the bad ones, will be sent to Heaven; and those whose evil actions preponderate, to the Hell. This belief has been taken in its entirety from the Jews. "The old Jewish writers," says Dr. Sale, "make mention as well of the books to be produced at the last day wherein men's actions are registered, as of the balance wherein they shall be weighed."†

The Jews in their turn borrowed this idea from the Zoroastrians. Dr. Sale hints that the Old Testament seems to have given the first notion of both (Exod., xxxii, 32-33; Dan., vii, 10; Revel., xx, 12;

* Sale's *Koran*, Prel. Dis., p. 68.

†*See* Midrash, Yalkut, Shemum, f. 153, c. 3 and Gemar Sauhedr, f. 91.

Dan., v, 27.) "But," he admits, "what the Persian Magi believe of the 'balance' comes nearest to the Mahomedan opinion. They hold that on the day of Judgment two angels named *Mehr* and *Surush* will stand on the bridge we shall describe by and by, to examine every person as he passes; that the former who represents divine mercy will hold a balance in his hand to weigh the actions of men; that according to the report he shall make thereof to God sentence will be pronounced, and those whose good works are found more ponderous, if they turn the scale but by the weight of a hair, will be permitted to pass forward to paradise; but those whose good works shall be found light will be, by the other angel who represents God's justice precipitated from the bridge into hell."*

On the road to heaven is the bridge called by Mahomed *Al Sirat*. This bridge is thrown over the abyss of hell, and is said to be finer than a hair, and sharper than the edge of a sword. Over this bridge the Muslims will easily pass led by Mahomed; whereas the wicked will soon miss their footing and fall down headlong into hell which is gaping beneath them. The Jews likewise speak of the bridge of hell which, according to them, is no broader than a thread. For this idea the Jews and the Mahomedans seem to be equally indebted to the Zoroastrians who teach that on the last day all men will be obliged to pass over a bridge called *Pul Chinavad*.†

Paradise.—After passing the *Al Sirat*, the faithful will reach paradise which is situated in the seventh

*Sale's *Koran*, Prel. Dis., p. 71: also see *Zend Avesta*, Part III, West Mainyu Khurd, p. 134.

†Sale's *Koran*, Prel. Dis., p. 78.

heaven. The Mahomedan conception of paradise is that of a beautiful garden, furnished with springs, fountains, and rivers flowing with water, milk, honey and balsam, and trees having their trunks of gold, and producing the most delicious fruits. Above all, there will be seventy resplendent ravishing girls called *hur-ul-ayun* on account of their big black eyes. For almost the whole of this description Mahomed is indebted to the Jews. "The Jews constantly describe the future mansion of the just as a delicious garden, and make it also reach the seventh heaven (*vide* Gemar Tanith, f. 25; Biracoth, f. 34; Midrash Sabboth, f. 37). They also say it has three gates..... and four rivers flowing with milk, wine, balsam, and honey. —(*Midrash, Yalkut Shewini*)."*

It is more than probable that the Jews themselves borrowed this idea from the Zoroastrians, who described the felicities of paradise in similar language. Dr. Sale observes: "The Persian Magi had also an idea of the future happy state of the good, very little different from that of Mahomed. Paradise they call *Bihisht*, and *Minu*, which signifies *crystal*, where they believe the righteous shall enjoy all manner of delights and particularly, the company of *huran-i-Bihisht* or black-eyed nymphs of paradise, the care of whom, they say, is committed to the angel Zamiyad and hence Mahomed seems to have taken the first hint of his paradisaical ladies."†

We may also quote from *Nama Minabad*, one of the later writings of the Parsis: "The lowest order of heaven is this that its inmates will enjoy all the delights of this world: nymphs, male and female slaves, meat and drink, clothing and

*Sale's *Koran*, Prel. Dis., p. 78.

†*Ibid*, p. 79.

bedding, articles of furniture, and other things which cannot be enumerated here."—*Mihabad*, 40 & 41.*

Hell.—Similarly the different torments of hell, the seven compartments into which it is said to be divided, and the partition called *Al Airaf*, separating heaven from hell, all seem to be copied from the Jews.

SECTION 3.—GOD AND THE DEVIL.

The Mahomedan conception of God agrees almost exactly with the Jewish notion. And the doctrine that there are two powers in the world, a good and benevolent power, *viz.*, God, and an evil and malevolent power, *viz.*, Satan, is also taken from the Jews. This notion, which seriously mars the Monotheism of the Bible and the Koran, was certainly borrowed by the Jews from the Zoroastrians, who call these two principles *Spenta Mainyu* and *Angira Mainyu*. In a later chapter† we shall discuss this question more fully, and show how this Zoroastrian idea can be traced to a beautiful allegory in the Veda, describing the struggle of good and evil in this world; and how this allegory was misunderstood till in the hands of the Jews, Christians, and Mahomedans, it degenerated into a belief in two powers, Satan having been elevated to a position a little below that of the Deity. This is a very important point, and will show, in a remarkable manner, how the stream of religious thought has flowed from the Vedas to the Zend Avesta, and thence to the Bible and the Koran.

*See also Chapter IV, § 8.

†*Vide* Chapter IV, § 4.

SECTION 4.—RELIGIOUS PRACTICES.

We have shown so far that the principal *dogmas* of the Mahomedan religion have a Judaic origin. We shall next show that their *religious practices* can be traced to the same source.

There are four duties incumbent upon every Mahomedan: *viz.*,(*i*) Prayer; (*ii*) Fasting; (*iii*) *Zakat* or charity; and (*iv*) Pilgrimage to Mecca.

(*i*) *Prayer.*—The following extract from the *Dasatir* would show to the reader that the several postures of the followers of the Prophet at prayers have been probably copied from the Zoroastrians:—

"During prayer a pious and wise man should stand ahead, and the rest should stand behind him. A man (during prayer) should stand erect and join his hands together; then bow down, then prostrate himself on the ground; then again stand erect, place one of his hands on the head, and removing it place the other hand on the head; then raise his head and clasp his hands without joining the thumbs, place his thumbs on his eyes, making the fingers reach the head, then bend his head down to his breast; then raise it; then sit on the ground; then putting his hand on the ground and kneeling down touch the ground with his forehead, and then with each side of the face; then prostrate himself on the ground like a staff; then stretch his hand till the breast touches the ground, then do the same with the thighs; then kneel down; then squat, and place his head on his folded hands. Such prayer is to be addressed to none but God."*

The practice among Mahomedans of saying their prayer with their faces towards the *Kabah* is likewise

*Yasan I, 59-61.

borrowed from the Jews who constantly pray with their faces turned towards the temple of Jerusalem. "The same," observes Dr. Sale, "was the *Kibla* of Mahomed and his followers for six or seven months (some say eighteen months, *vide* Abulfed, Nit. Moh., p. 54), till he found himself obliged to change it for the *Kabah*."*

The practice of performing before prayers ablutions with water or sand is also borrowed from the Jews and the Persians. The circumcision is well-known to be a Jewish custom.

(*ii*) *Fasting.*—Speaking of Mahomed's ordinances concerning *fasting*, Dr. Sale traces them to those of the Jews, and observes: "That nation, when they fast abstain not only from eating and drinking but from women and from anointing themselves, from daybreak until sunset.....spending the night in taking what refreshments they please, (Gemar Yama, f. 40, etc.)" †

(*iii*) *Charity.*—This is of two kinds, *viz.*, (1) *Zakat*, and (2) *Sadka*; and specific rules are laid down for the giving of these alms. In these rules also Dr. Sale observes the footsteps of the Jews, (*vide* Prel. Dis., p. 87).

(*iv*) *The Haj or Pilgrimage to Mecca.*—The pilgrimage to Mecca was not borrowed from the Jews, but was a relic of the pagan Arabs. The temple of Mecca had long been held in singular veneration by the Arabs, and the Prophet considered it inexpedient to disturb the belief.

Section 5.—Negative Precepts.

Among the negative precepts common to the Jews and the Mahomedans may be mentioned

* Sale's Prel. Dis., p. 85.

† Sale's Prel. Dis.

abstaining from gaming;* wine;† usury‡ and certain kinds of prohibited meats.

Regarding prohibited meats we read in the Koran as follows:—"Ye are forbidden to eat that which dieth of itself, and blood, and swine's flesh and that on which the name of any besides God has been invocated, and that which hath been strangled or killed by a blow, or by a fall, or by the horns of another beast, and that which has been eaten by a wild beast, except what ye shall kill yourselves, and that which had been sacrificed to idols."§ "In these particulars," says Dr. Sale, "Mahomed seems chiefly to have imitated the Jews, by whose law, as is well known, all those things are forbidden, but he allowed some things to be eaten which Moses did not."||

Section 6.—Civil Institutions.

The civil institution of the Mahomedans are founded upon the *Koran*, as those of the Jews are founded on the *Pentateuch*. That the former were copied from the latter would be evident from the following: –

(*i*) *Polygamy* is allowed by both, but no Mussalman may marry more than four wives at a time. "In making the above-mentioned limitation," observes Dr. Sale, "Mahomed was directed by the decision of the Jewish doctors who, by way of counsel, limit the number of wives to four (*vide* Maimon in Halachoth Ishath, c. 14), though their law confines them not to any certain number."¶

* *Vide* Bana Mesia, 84, 1; Roch. Aashena, 24, 2.

† *Vide* Levit., x, 8-9 ;Numbers, vi, 2-3.

‡ *Vide* Exodus, xxii, 25.

§ Sale's *Koran*, Chapter v, p. 73.

|| See Levit., xi, 4.

¶ Sale's Prel. Dis., p. 104.

(*ii*) *Divorce* is an institution common to both religions. In allowing divorce Mahomed has followed Jews. When a woman is divorced, she must wait for three months before she can remarry. This period, is called *iddat*. At the end of this period, if she is found with child, she must be delivered of it before she can marry again. "These rules" says Dr. Sale, "are also copied from the Jews, according to whom a divorced woman or widow cannot marry another man till ninety days be passed after the divorce or death of the husband." Dr. Sale adds : "The institutions of Mahomed relating to the pollution of women during their courses, the taking of salves to wife, and the prohibiting of marriage within certain degrees, have likewise no small affinity with the institution of Moses."*

Section 7.—Some Minor Similarities.

(*i*) The setting apart of one day in the week for the special service of God is also an institution of the Jews who keep Saturday sacred. The Christians have Sunday for their Sabbath day. Mahomed has imitated these religions in this respect ; but for the sake of distinction he has ordered his followers to observe Friday, instead of Saturday or Sunday.

(*ii*) The celebrated formula of the Koran "*La-Elah-illilah*" (there is no God but God) is a mere paraphrase of the Zoroastrian formula, "*Nestezad magar Yazdan.*"

(*iii*) It should be further noted that every chapter of the Koran (excepting only the ninth) opens with the words "*Bismillah ur Rahman er Rahim,*" which exactly correspond to the formula

* Sale's Prel. Dis., 105-06.

with which the Zoroastrians begin their books, *viz.*, "*Banam Yadaz bakhshish gar dadar*" (in the name of the most merciful God).

Section 8.—Summary.

The above is sufficient to show that Mahomedanism has borrowed almost all its doctrines and precepts mainly from Judaism and partly from Zoroastrianism. The religion of the Koran cannot, therefore, claim to be a *new* revelation, or a *special* dispensation of the Will of God. Our Mahomedan brethren will perhaps urge "the monotheism of the Koran is purer and better than that of Judaism and Christianity, to speak nothing of Zoroastrianism which is not monotheism at all, being a belief in two gods." Now there can be no doubt that the Christian conception of God is, in several ways, superior to the Mahomedan conception. God is represented by the Christians as a more righteous, more merciful, more holy and more loving being than the God of the Koran. In another way, the theism of Christianity is certainly inferior to that of the Koran. Christianity teaches the doctrine of Trinity which is virtually a belief in three gods, and in this respect the Koran teaches a stricter monotheism than Christianity. But it is difficult to understand how Mahomedanism can claim to teach a better theism than Judaism; because both are equally monotheistic or equally dualistic. Both raise Satan to a position all but equal to that of God, and thus equally mar the purity of their monotheism. Both have the same conception of the Divine character; and the anthropomorphic, vascillating, and revengeful *Jehovah* of the Jews finds an exact counterpart in the *Allah* of the Koran, who is described as an intolerant and despotic potentate, urging his worshippers to make war upon, and slay, the infidels.

As for Zoroastrianism, its theism is in no way inferior to that of either Judaism or Mahomedanism. "Ahurmazda" says the Rev. L. H. Mills, "is one of the purest conceptions which had yet been produced,"* and—we may add,—is undoubtedly the prototype of the God of the Koran as well as the God of the Bible. We shall revert to this subject in detail later on.† The great value of Mahomed's doctrine of the unity of God lies in its being a protest against the degenerate Christianity of his time and the polytheism of the Arabs among whom he lived. But however superior to the belief of his contemporaries, the theism of the Koran can hardly be said to be superior to that of Judaism. The claim of the Koran, therefore, to be an independent revelation of God, on the plea of teaching a better theism than Judaism and Zoroastrianism, to which it can be traced, is untenable.

* Zend Avesta, Part III, Introduction, p. xviii.

† *Vide* Chapter IV., § 3-4 ; and Chapter V., § 5.

CHAPTER II.

CHRISTIANITY IS BASED CHIEFLY ON JUDAISM AND PARTLY ON BUDDHISM

["What is now called the Christian religion has existed among ancients and was not absent from the beginning of the human race, until Christ came in the flesh, from which time the true religion, which existed already, began to be called Christianity."—St. Augustine.]

SECTION 1.—JUDAISM AND CHRISTIANITY.

THE dogmas of the Christian religion, as its followers themselves confess, are all taken from Judaism. The Old Testament is accepted as the Word of God by Christians, as much as by the Jews. Christ, a Jew by birth, never professed to abolish Judaism, and to set up a new religion of his own. In his beautiful "Sermon on the Mount" he explains very clearly his attitude towards the older religion:—"Think not that I am come to destroy the law or the prophets: I am not come to destroy but to fulfil. For, verily I say unto you: Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in nowise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach *them*, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven."*

Here it may be asked: Is there, then, no difference between Judaism and Christianity? Are the teachings of the two religions *exactly* the same? Is there nothing to distinguish one from the other? We answer that the dogmas or metaphysical doctrines of Christianity are certainly the same as those of Judaism, but its moral precepts are much higher and nobler than those of the Jewish prophets. This difference between the two systems is

*Matthew, V, 17—19

very vividly brought out by Christ himself in his soul-elevating "Sermon on the Mount," from which we have already quoted:—

"For I say unto you, that except your righteousness shall exceed *the righteousness* of the scribes and Pharisees, ye shall in no case enter into the kingdom of heaven."

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill, shall be in danger of the judgment: But I say unto you that whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause, shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell-fire. Therefore, if thou bring the gift to the altar, and there rememberest that thy brother hath aught against thee; Leave there thy gift before the altar and go thy way; first be reconciled to thy brother, and then come and offer thy gift. Agree with thine adversary quickly, while thou art in the way with him; lest at any time the adversary deliver thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and thou be cast into prison. Verily I say unto thee, Thou shalt by no means come out thence, till thou hast paid the uttermost farthing."

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not commit adultery: But I say unto you that whosoever looketh on a woman to lust after her hath committed adultery with her already in his heart. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast *it* from thee, for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body be cast into hell. And if thy right hand offend thee, cut it off,

and cast *it* from thee: for it is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not *that* thy whole body should be cast into hell. It hath been said, Whosoever shall put away his wife let him give her a writing of divorcement: But I say unto you, That whosoever shall put away his wife, saving for the cause of fornication, causeth her to commit adultery: and whosoever shall marry her that is divorced committeth adultery.'

"Again, ye have heard that it hath been said by them of old time, Thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform unto the Lord thine oaths: But I say unto you, Swear not at all; neither by heaven, for it is God's throne; nor by the earth, for it is his footstool: neither by Jerusalem, for it is the city of the great King. Neither shalt thou swear by the head, because thou canst not make one hair white or black. But let your communication be, *Yea, yea*; *Nay, nay*: for whatsoever is more than these cometh of evil."

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, An eye for an eye, and a tooth for a tooth: but I say unto you that ye resist not evil: but whosoever shall smite thee on thy right cheek, turn to him the other also. And if any man will sue thee at the law, and take away thy coat, let him have thy cloak also. And whosoever shall compel thee to go a mile, go with him twain. Give to him that asketh thee, and from him that would borrow of thee, turn not thou away."

"Ye have heard that it hath been said, thou shalt love thy neighbour, and hate thine enemy. But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you; That ye may be the children of your father which is in heaven: for he maketh

his sun to rise on the evil and on the good, and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust. For if ye love them which love you, what reward have ye? Do not even the publicans the same? And if ye salute your brethren only, what do ye more than others? Do not even the publicans so? Be ye therefore perfect even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect."*

From the above it is clear that Christianity as a system of morals is a great advance on Judaism. Humility of spirit, purity of conduct, forgiveness of injury, relinquishment of worldly desires, peace, charity, goodness, toleration and love—in short, a higher ideal of human life and a nobler code of morality, are what distinguish the religion of Christ from the older religion of Moses.

But these are by no means original with Christianity, being due to the influence of Buddhism.

Buddhist Element in Christianity.

Section 2.—Channel of Communication

"The moral precepts and teachings of Buddhism" says Mr. R. C. Dutt, "have so much in common with those of Christianity, that some connection between the two systems of religion has long been suspected".† The teaching of Buddha had penetrated into the Greek world long before the birth of Christ. We know from Asoka's inscription of Girnar that in his reign Buddhist preachers had

---

* Matthew, v: 20-48.

†*Civilization in Ancient India* by Mr. R. C. Dutt, C.S., C. I. E., Vol. II, p. 328.

gone to Syria to preach the religion. Pliny, the Naturalist (a celebrated Roman Historian of the 1st century A. C.), describes a religious sect called the *Essenes* * living in Palestine about a century before Christ, who, as modern researches have shown, were a sect of Buddhists. In Egypt also there was a similar sect called the *Therapeuts*. That these were a branch of the Essenes, or, in other words, Buddhists, is admitted even by such devout Christians as Renan, the celebrated author of *Life of Jesus*. Says he: "The Therapeutæ of Philo are a branch of the Essenes. Their name appears to be but a Greek translation of that of the Essenes."† Thus we learn that when Christ was born, Buddhism prevailed in Palestine, Syria and Egypt, and Buddhist precepts were received as household words among the Essenes of Palestine. "Some moderate Christians" says Mr. R. C. Dutt, "admit that Buddhism in Syria was a preparation, a fore-runner (to quote the words used by Professor Mahaffy) of the religion preached by Christ over two centuries later." ‡ We know that John the Baptist, the fore-runner of Christ, was well familiar with the doctrines of the Essenes. Some writers maintain that he was an Essene himself.§ It would appear, therefore, that Jesus Christ himself learnt much of the rites and teachings of the Buddhists from the Baptist. These facts are enough to show a channel of communication between Buddhism and Christianity.

---

* *Vide Historia Naturalis*, v : 17, quoted by Mr. R. C. Dutt, in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 338.

†Quoted in Dutt's *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 337.

‡ *Ancient India*, Vol. II, 329.

§ *See* Bunsen's *Angel Messiah of Buddhists, Essenes and Christians*. p. 49, referred to in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 338.

Section 3.—Similarity in Precepts.

Having indicated the possibility of communication, we now put side by side some precepts of Buddha and of Christ, to show how closely they resemble each other in language and in sentiment:—

Buddha.

1.—"What is the use of plated hair? O fool! what of the raiment of goatskins? within thee there is ravening, but the outside thou makest clean."—*Dhammapada*, 394

Christ.

1.—"Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited sepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward but are within full of dead man's bones and of all uncleanliness."—*Mathew*, xxiii: 27.

"And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees, make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness."—*Luke*, xi: 39.

Buddha.	Christ.
2.—"Hatred does not cease by hatred at any time, hatred ceases by love: this is its nature. Let us live happily, not hating those who hate us. Among men who hate us, let us live far from hatred. Let him overcome anger by love; let him overcome evil by good."—*Dhammapada*, v: 197 & 223.	2.—"But I say unto you, Love your enemies, bless them that curse you, do good to them that hate you, and pray for them which despitefully use you, and persecute you."—*Mathew*, v 44.
3.—"Destroying living beings, killing, cutting, binding, stealing, speaking falsehood, fraud, deception, worthless reading, intercourse with another's wife—this is *Anigandha* (what defiles a man)."—*Anigandha Sutta of Sutta Nipat* (SACRED BOOKS OF THE EAST SERIES, p. 40).	3.—"For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornication, theft, false witness, blasphemies. These are the things which defile a man."—*Mathew*, xv: 19-20.
4.—"Like a beautiful flower, full of colour but without scent, are the fine and fruitless words of him who does not act accordingly."—*Dhammapada*, 51.	4.—"All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their words: for they say, and do not."—*Mathew*, xxiii: 3.

Buddha.	Christ.
5.—"All men tremble at punishment, all men love life. Remember that you are like unto them and do not kill or cause slaughter."—*Dhammapada*, 130.*	5.—"And as ye would that men should do to you do ye also to them likewise."—*Luke*, vi: 31.
6.—"The fault of others is easily perceived, but of ourself is difficult to perceive. A man winnows his neighbour's fault like chaff, but his own faults he hides as a cheat hides the bad die from the gambler."—*Dhammapada* †	6.—"And why beholdest thou the mote that is in thy brother's eye, but considerest not the beam that is in thine own eye."—*Mathew*, vii: 3.

Thus we see that inward purity, meekness, forgiveness, returning good for evil—these are the distinctive features of Buddhism as well as of Christianity.

---

*Compare—

श्रूयतां धर्मसर्वस्वं श्रुत्वाचैवावधार्य्यताम्।
आत्मनः प्रतिकूलानि परेषान्न समाचरेत्॥
(महाभारते)

"Listen to the sum total of the law; and having listened conform to it. Do not do to others what you do not like for your self."—*Mahabharata*.

†Compare—

खलः सर्षपमात्राणि परच्छिद्राणि पश्यति।
आत्मनो बिल्वमात्राणि पश्यन्नपि न पश्यति।
(चाणक्यनीति)

"A wicked man sees another's faults even if they are so small a a mustard seed. But he is wilfully blind to his own (faults), thougl they are as big as a *bel* fruit."—*Chanakyaniti*.

The parables of the New Testament also bear a marked resemblance to those of Buddha, and are probably copied from them. "Renan," says Mr. Dutt, "who is so unwilling to admit Buddhist influence on the development of Christianity, nevertheless states that there was nothing in Judaism which could have furnished Jesus with a model for the parable style. On the other hand, 'we find in the Buddhist books parables of exactly the same tone and the same character as the Gospel parables.'—*Life of Jesus* (Translation), p. 36".* The space at our disposal will not permit us to quote these parables at length for the sake of comparing them. We may, by way of illustration, refer the reader to the parable of the sower in *Bhardwaja Sutta*, which may be compared with John, v: 14; and to the parable of Dhaniya in *Dhaniya Sutta*, which closely resembles Luke, xii: 16.

Section 4.—Similarity in Monastic Forms and Ceremonies.

Dr. Fergusson who is perhaps the highest authority on the subject of Indian Architecture, makes the following remarks about the Buddhist cave temple of Karli, the date of which he fixes at 78 B. C.:—"The building resembles, to a great extent, an early Christian Church in its arrangement, consisting of a nave and side aisles, terminating in an apse or semidome, round which the aisle is carried... As a scale for comparison, it may be mentioned that its arrangements and dimensions are very similar to those of the choir of Norwich Cathedral and of the *Abbaye aux Hommes* at Caen, omitting the outer aisles in the

* *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 333.

latter building. Immediately under the semidome of the apse and nearly where the altar stands in Christian churches, is placed the Dagopa.'"*

"But the architectural similarity," says Mr. Dutt, "sinks into insignificance in comparison with the resemblance in rituals between the Buddhist and the Roman Catholic Church. A Roman Catholic missionary, Abbe Hue, was much struck by what he saw in Tibet. "The crozier, the mitre the dalmatic, the cope or pluvial, which the Grand Lamas wear on a journey or when they part, or in some ceremony outside the temple, the service with a double choir, psalmody, exorcisms,, the censer swinging on five chains contrived to be opened or shut at will, benedictions by the Lamas with the right hand extended over the heads of the faithful, the chaplet, sacerdotal celibacy, lenten retirements from the world, worship of saints, fasts, processions, litanies, holy water;—these are the points of contact between the Buddhists and ourselves." Mr. Arthur Lillie, from whose book Mr. Dutt has quoted the above passage remarks: "The good Abbe has, by no means, exhausted the list and might have added confessions, tonsure, relic worship, the use of flowers, lights and images before shrines and altars, the signs of the Cross, the trinity in Unity, the worship of the queen of heaven, the use of religious books in a tongue unknown to the bulk of the worshippers, the aureole or nimbus, the crown of saints and Buddhas, wings to angels, penance, flagellations, the flabellum or fan, popes, cardinals, bishops, abbots, presbyters, deacons, the various architectural details of the Christian temple. To this list Balfour's *Cyclopœdia of India*

* Quoted in *Ancient India*, Vol. p. 334.

adds amulets, medicines, illumiuated missals, and Mr. Thomson (*Illustrator of China*, Vol. II., p. 18), baptism, the mass, requiems"—(*Buddhism and Christendom*. p. 202).*

Baptism which is already included in the above list is common to Buddhism and to Christianity Indeed, it was originally a Buddhist ceremony, called अभिषेक *Abhisheka*, and was probably borrowed by John the Baptist from the Essenes or Buddhists of Palestine. When Christ came in contact with John the Baptist, he adopted this rite, which has since become a fundamntal rite of the Christian religion. A Christian acknowledges the Holy Trinity of the Father, the Son, and the Holy Ghost at baptism. Similarly, a Buddhist acknowledges the Trinity of *Buddha*, *Dhamma* and *Sangha* at *Abhisheka*.

"So strong is the resemblance", says Mr. R. C. Dutt, "that the first Christian missionaries who travelled in Tibet and China, believed and recorded their impression that the Buddhist Church had borrowed their rites and forms from the Roman Catholic Church. We will show, however, in our next book that the Buddehists excavated many of their great church edifices in India before Jesus Christ was born; that a vast monastery, a wealthy church and a learned university flourished in Nalanda, near Patna, before similar church edifices and monasteries were seen in Europe; and that as Buddhism declined in India, gorgeous Buddhist rites, ceremonials, and other places by Buddhists in Tibet, China, and other countries before Europe had yet recovered from the invasions of barbarous races, or had developed her feudal

* Quoted from *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 335.

civilization or feudal church system." The learned writer goes on, and concludes by saying that "the entire structure of the Church government and Church institutions, in so far as there is a resemblance between the two systems, was borrowed from the East by the West, not from the West by the East."*

Section 5.—Similarity in the Accounts of the Lives of Buddha and Christ.

It is not a little strange that the remarkable resemblance, which we have noticed between Buddhism and Christianity extends even to the lives of their founders. Gautama Buddha, as well as Jesus Christ, is said to have been miraculously born. The birth of each was attended with marvellous omens, and was presided over by a star which, in the case of Gautama, was the well-known *Pushya Nakshatra*.

In Gautama's Life, we are told that when he was born a certain *rishi*, Asita by name, came to King Suddhodana to see the new-born child.

Similarly, in the New Testament, we read :— "When Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judea, in the days of Herod the King, behold there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, saying 'Where is he that is born king of the Jews? For we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.'"†

The legends of the evil spirit *Mara* having tempted Gautama before he attained to Buddha-

---

* *Ancient India*, Vol. II, pp. 335-6.

† Mathew, ii : 1-2.

hood, bear a marked resemblance to the legends of Satan having tempted Jesus Christ.* Both Gautama and Jesus are said to have had twelve disciples each. The same catholic and benevolent spirit impelled both to proclaim the truths of their system to all mankind without any distinction of creed or caste. These remarkable similarities would show that Christian legends and traditions, as well as Christian precepts and rites, are, to a great extent, derived from Buddhism.

Section 6.—Summary.

We have shown that Buddhism prevailed in Palestine when Christ was born; that Christ himself came in contact with it through John the Baptist. We have shown that there is a striking resemblance between Buddhism and Christianity in their precepts, in their forms and ceremonies, in the architectural style of their temples, and even in the accounts of the lives of their founders. Is this all mere chance? "If all this be chance," says Mr. Rhys Davids, "it is a most stupendous miracle of coincidence, it is in fact ten thousand miracles."—*Hibbert Lectures*, 1881, p. 193. Indeed, on the facts before us, it is impossible not to conclude that Christianity owes much to Buddhism. Even Christian writers like Prof. Max Muller, have found themselves forced to confess this. As proof upon proof is brought forward to show the priority in other religions of the truths of Christianity, the Professor exclaims :—"And why should every truth be borrowed from Christianity? Why should not Christianity also have borrowed.?" † There occurs another admission in his *Chips from a German Workshop*, a sentence from which we have already quoted : "There has been no entirely new

* *See* Mathew, iv : 1-11.

† *Gifford Lectures*, pp. 10-11.

religion since the beginning of the world. If we once understand this clearly, the words of St. Augustine, which have seemed startling to many of his admirers, become perfectly clear and intelligible, when he says 'what is now called the Christian religion has existed among ancients and was not absent from the beginning of the human race until Christ came in the flesh, from which time the true religion, which existed already, began to be called Christian.' "—*August Reh.*, i: 13. From this point of view the words of Christ, too, which startled the Jews, assume their true meaning. when he said to the centurion of Copernaum: "Many shall come from the East and the West and shall sit down with Abraham and Israel and Jacob in the kingdom of heaven."*

This is a pretty clear admission and shows how the West is being gradually awakened to a sense of its obligation to the East. "A few writers like Bunsen, Seydil and Lillie" says Mr. R. C. Dutt, "maintain that the Christian religion has sprung directly from Buddhism."† This, as the learned writer justly observes, is an extreme opinion. The doctrines of Christianity have little to do with Buddhism having been taken from Judaism. But there is no denying the fact that Christianity owes to Buddhism that higher morality which distinguishes it from Judaism, or to use Mr. Dutt's words "Christianity as an ethical and moral advance on the religions of antiquity is based undoubtedly on Buddhism, as preached in Palestine by the Essenes, when Jesus was born."‡

---

* *Chips from a German Workshop*, by Prof. Max Muller, Vol. I Introduction, p. 11.

† *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 329.

‡ *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 340.

CHAPTER III.

BUDDHISM IS BASED ON THE VEDIC RELIGION.

SECTION 1.—BUDDHA'S TEACHING ORIGINALLY NOT MEANT TO BE A NEW RELIGION.

IN the last chapter we have traced the sources of Christianity. We have shown that its doctrines are based on Judaism and its moral precepts on Buddhism. The Vedic source of Judaism, through Zoroastrianism, will form the subject of the last two chapters. In the present chapter we shall prove that Buddhism, or that noble code of morality, which was preached by Buddha, and which influenced the development of Christianity, sprang up directly from the Vedic religion. The proposition will, perhaps, startle some followers of the Vedic religion, who regard Buddhism as antagonistic to the Vedas. Yet certain it is that Buddha never thought of founding a new religion. Mr. Dutt, who in his admiration for Buddha yields to none, admits: "He (Buddha) had made no new discovery; he had acquired no new knowledge."* And again: "It would be historically wrong to suppose that Gautama Buddha consciously set himself up as the founder of a new religion. On the contrary he believed to the last that he was proclaiming only the ancient and pure form of religion which had prevailed among the Hindus, among Brahmans, Sramans, and others, but which had been corrupted at a later day.

---

* *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p 206.

As a matter of fact, Hinduism recognised wandering bodies of ascetics who renounced the world, performed no Vedic rites, and passed their days in contemplation, (*see Ante*, p. 98). Such bodies were known as *Bhikshus* in the Hindu law books and were generally known as *Sramans*. Gautama founded only one sect of *Sramans* among many sects which then existed, and his sect was known as that of the *Sakyaputriya Sramans* to distinguish them from others. He taught them relinquishment of the world, a holy life, and pious meditation, such as all sect of *Sramans* recommended and practised."*

Section 2.—Reasons why Buddhism became a Distinct Religion.

It may be asked how did then Buddhism become a new and distinct religion? In order to answer this question, we should know what the state of the Vedic religion was when Buddha lived and taught.

The period immediately preceding the advent of Buddha forms one of the dark chapters in the history of the Vedic religion. The pure and noble religion of the Vedas and the Upanishads had degenerated into dead forms, unmeaning rites, and cumbrous ceremonies. The Vedic division of *varnas*, (originally based on division of labour and on merit), had degenerated into a system of hereditary castes in the worst sense of the term. As a natural consequence, the Brahmans, secure of honour merely by their birth, neglected the study of the Vedas, and the practice of virtue, for which their forefathers had been justly reverenced. This moral and religious degeneration could not remain confined to the Brahmans only. The *Sanayasis*, no longer possessed of religious

** Ancient India*, Vol. II, pp. 181-2.

knowledge, inward purity, and meekness of spirit, only made a show of their ascetic practices. The people, too, were no longer as simple, pious and virtuous as in the Vedic times, and became the worshippers of forms, and slaves of luxury. The simple diet of the ancient Aryans was replaced by a flesh diet. And, in order that flesh-eating may have the sanction of religion, animals were slaughtered and sacrificed in *yajnas*.

Such was the state of the Vedic religion, or rather of Aryan society, at the time when Buddha appeared. He was particularly struck by the last two evils, namely, *animal sacrifices* and *caste system*. His tender and loving heart could not bear the shedding of so much innocent blood in the sacred name of religion. And his noble soul rebelled against the ignoble and invidious distinction of caste. The latter specially called forth all his philanthropic enthusiasm, and his innate love for his fellow beings. In fact, the evil had become so serious that it had been condemned by many writers even before the time of Buddha. It pervaded all social, religious, and political affairs, and affected even the law of the land. There was one law for the Brahmans, another for the Kshatriyas, a third for the Vaishyas, and a fourth for the Sudras. The Brahmans were treated with undue leniency, and the Sudras with undue severity. Such a state of affairs could not last long. The Sudras, for whom there was no religious knowledge, no social respect, however righteous and virtuous they might be, only wanted an opportunity to throw off their chains. The victims of an unjust system, which rigidly excluded them from higher society, they sighed for a change. Even many large-hearted and liberal minded *dvijas* (Brahmans, Kshatriyas, and Vaishyas), sympathis-

ed with their aspirations. The time was, therefore, ripe for a revolution, and it required no extraordinary foresight to see that the time would come when society would rebel against the pernicious system and break its chains. That time did come. A Kshatriya of royal family declared that merit and not birth determined a man's position in society. Numberless persons gathered round him. We can easily imagine how anxiously the persecuted Sudras must have joined him. But even many twice-born Aryas responded to his just and righteous appeals, and Buddhism soon spread from one corner of the land to the other.

This is the true secret of Buddha's success, and of his becoming, though unconsciously, the founder of a new religion. Like most great reformers he was, to a great extent, the creature of his age. In declaiming heroically against the unscrupulous and merciless slaughter of animals, and the unnatural and unrighteous distinction of caste, he struck the chord which vibrated in the hearts of most of his contemporaries. Had he been born in an age when these evils did not exist, he would have made little impression; indeed, there would have been no occasion for his reform. But living in the age in which he did, he naturally attracted a large number of followers, and unconsciously became the founder of a new faith.

Section 3.—Destructive or Negative side of Buddhism.

This is all that need be said about the *destructive* part of Buddha's teachings. His attacks were directed chiefly against two evils. As Mr. Dutt remarks: "Gautama was not a thoughtless destroyer, nor a heedless and enthusiastic opponent of all that was orthodox and ancient. He did not

raise his hand against a single institution or belief which he did not consider positively mischievous and a later corruption of the old religion. He denounced caste, because he found it mischievous, and *believed it to be a late and corrupted form of ancient Brahmanism.* And he proclaimed the fruitlessness of Vedic rites, because he found them, *as then practised*, to be silly, meaningless, dead forms, attended with needless cruelty to animals and loss of life."* (The italics are ours.)

But it may be asked: Did Buddha not deny the existence of God, and consequently also the revealed character or authority of the Vedas? As regards the belief in God, we may say that Buddha was probably an agnostic but not an atheist. The denial of God, or even of the revelation of the Vedas, was no essential part of Buddha's doctrine. It seems that he was contented with preaching self-culture and self-restraint, and did not take the trouble of attempting a solution of the great problem of the Universe:—Is this world eternal and everlasting? If not, how did it come into existence? Perhaps he thought that the problem could never be solved satisfactorily. His disciples often† pressed the enquiry on him, but he made no categorical reply.

Indeed, there are many passages‡ in Buddhist works, which show that he discouraged such inqui-

---

* *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. ?

† For example, once a certain Malyukyaputta put this question to Gautama... But he answered: "Have I said, come Malyukyaputta and be my disciple, I shall teach thee whether the world is everlasting or not?" "That thou hast not said, sire," replied Malyukyaputta. "Then," said Gautama, "do not press the inquiry."—*Kula Malukyaovad, Majjhama Nikaya* (quoted in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 236).

‡ For example, see *Pasu Sutta*, *Sutta Nipat*; also *Mahamyuha Sutta*, *Sutta Nipat*.

ries and disputations. To him religion consisted only in the practice of virtue. In other words, Gautama Buddha only looked at the practical side of religion, and neglected the theoretical or metaphysical side altogether. This was the great weakness of early Buddhism. Questions like these must be asked and must be answered one way or the other. And a system of religion, which ignores or evades them, cannot satisfy the cravings of the human heart. Later Buddhists have made up for this deficiency by declaring that the Universe has been in existence, as it is, for all eternity, and therefore needs no creator, thus making their religion purely atheistic. But this was not Buddha's position. He would not say "whether the world is everlasting or not." Still, though originally agnostic, Buddha's doctrine, like every system of agnosticism, led to atheism. This, as we have already noticed, is the great defect of Buddhism *as a system of religion*, however excellent it may be *as a system of morality*. It was this which finally sealed its fate in India. Buddhism spread in this country because originally it was only a righteous protest against the unjust distinctions of caste and cruel slaughter of animals, and an appeal for the practice of virtue and morality. It was swept away because it led to atheism.

Being sceptical about the existence of the Deity, Buddha could not believe in a Divine Revelation. His attitude towards the Vedas, however, was not one of hostility but of indifference, and his indifference was due partly to his ignorance of the Vedas, and partly to the belief of the age that the Vedas sanctioned slaughter of animals and distinction of castes as then prevalent. Had he been well-versed in the Vedas, and had he preached his doctrine of love and equality on the authority of a

correct interpretation of the Vedas, he would have become, like Swami Dayananda Saraswati of our own times—a Vedic reformer—instead of being the apostle of a new faith. Or, if the people of that age had been less conservative, better informed about the real teachings of the Vedas, and consequently more ready to reform their own religion rather than renounce it for another, then, also, the evil of a new religion taking its rise in the country, in opposition to the older religion, would have been averted, and India would not have been split in twain, and ravaged by internecine wars which were waged for a long time between the followers of the two faiths.

Section 4.—Constructive or Positive side of Buddhism.

As for the *constructive part* of Buddha's teachings, we have not much to say. He only preached the noble precepts of Vedic religion: self-culture, self-restraint, love for mankind, love for all sentient beings, practice of virtue, and inward purity. The *four cardinal truths*, which Buddha preached, are: (*i*) that life is suffering; (*ii*) that the cause of suffering is thirst or desire; (*iii*) that the extinction of thirst leads to cessation of suffering; and (*iv*) that this extinction of thirst can be achieved by the eight-fold path, *i.e.*, practise of (1) right belief, (2) right aspiration, (3) right speech, (4) right conduct, (5) right means of livelihood, (6) right exertion, (7) right mindfulness, and (8) right meditation,—*see Mahavagya* I, 6, quoted in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 231). We need hardly say that these truths occur repeatedly in the various books of Vedic religion and philosophy. As an example, we may quote the 2nd aphorism of Nyaya Sutras:

दुःखजन्मप्र वृत्तिदोषमिथ्याज्ञानानामुत्तरोत्तरापाये तदनन्तरापायादपवर्गः। —न्याय १।२

"Of suffering, attachment [to life], evil motive and false knowledge the extinction of one leads to the extinction of that which precedes it; and the extinction of suffering is *summum bonum* or emancipation."* This means that false knowledge leads to evil motives; evil motives leads to attachment to life; attachment leads to birth; birth leads to suffering; and that in the same order, the extinction of one would lead to the extinction of the other. In other words, suffering is a necessary accompaniment of birth or of life (the *first* truth of Buddha); the cause of birth and consequently of suffering is attachment to life which is the result of desire or thirst (the *second* truth of Buddha); the extinction of desire and of attachment to life leads to the extinction of suffering (the *third* truth of Buddha); and right knowledge leads to extinction of desire and of attachment (part of the *fourth* truth of Buddha).

The five *commandments*, which are obligatory on all Buddhists, monks as well as laymen, are as follows:—†

(1) Let not one kill any living being.
(2) Let not one take what is not given to him.
(3) Let not one speak falsely.
(4) Let not one drink intoxicating drink.
(5) Let not one have unchaste sexual intercourse.

Mr. Dutt observes that "these were, no doubt suggested by Vashishta's five *Mahapatakas*."‡ We

* Nyaya Sutras, I, 2.

†*Dhammika Sutta Nipāto*, quoted in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 262.

‡ The five *Mahapatakas* or great sins, according to Vashishta, are :—"The violation of a *Guru's* bed, the drinking of spirituous liquor, murder, theft, and spiritual or matrimonial connection with outcastes" (I, 19 to 21), quoted in *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 103.

would, however, trace them to the five *yamas* or rules of conduct, prescribed by Patanjali in his Yoga Sutra:—

अहिंसा सत्यास्तेयब्रह्मचर्य्यापरिग्रहा यमाः ।
—योग अ० १ । पा० २ सू० ३० ॥

"Not to kill any living being, not to speak falsely, not to commit theft, not to have unchaste sexual intercourse, not to indulge too much in luxuries or sensual pleasures, are the five *yamas* or rules of conduct."*

Buddhism, as preached by Buddha, is nothing but a system of morality, and Buddhist works abound in moral precepts, which may be easily traced to the books of the Vedic religion. As Mr. Dutt remarks: "Buddhism accepted this noble heritage from the ancient Hindus, and embalmed it in its sacred literature. In Gautama's categories of duties we find all that is noblest and best in the Dharma Sutras."†

We have shown that Buddha did not preach any *new* religion or any *new* truth. He only repudiated certain evils which were no part of true Vedic religion, but had formed, at a later date, an ugly crust over it. In other respects, he preached the precepts of the Vedic religion. *Buddhism*, therefore—by which term we here understand the noble precepts taught by Gautama—is based on the Vedic religion.

* Yoga Satras, I, ii: 30.

† *Ancient India*, Vol. II, p. 268.

CHAPTER IV.

JUDAISM IS BASED ON ZOROASTRIANISM.

1. Preliminary.

We now come to Judaism, which, though at present having but a small number of followers, has given rise to two great religions of the world, *i. e.*, Mahomedanism and Christianity. But although the religion of the few and the despised, it should not be supposed that Judaism lacks supporters. The Mahomedans admit, and the Koran itself is very explicit on the point—that their religion is founded almost exclusively on Judaism. Therefore though frequently accusing the Jews of tampering with their scriptures, and of suppressing some prophecies supposed to have been contained in them about Mahomed, they yet regard Moses and other writers of the Old Testaments, as God-sent prophets, and would naturally dislike any attempt to prove that the Jewish prophets had derived their inspiration from the Parsis. Similarly, Christians whose religious doctrines are by the confession of Jesus Christ himself, based on the Jewish religion, would be equally anxious to establish the revealed nature of Judaism. Now, considering that those to whom we are chiefly indebted for the great antiquarian researches of the present age are mostly Christians, we need not be surprised if we do not find much in the way of critical enquiry into the origin of Judaism. Few Christian scholars are willing to acknowledge the indebtedness of Judaism to Zoroastrianism. As an example of the above we may refer to Prof. Max Muller's remarks on Dr. Spiegel's position that the religious ideas of the Genesis are borrowed from the Avesta. Dr. Spiegel's book has not, so far as we know, been translated into English, and our knowledge of it is

derived only from Prof. Max Muller's criticism of the same in his *Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I. Prof. Max Muller does not think that Dr. Spiegel has established his points, and exclaims in the very first sentence of this chapter:—"O that scholars could have the benefit of a little legal training, and learn at least the difference between what is probable and what is proven!"* He then goes on:—"We were much pleased therefore on finding that Prof. Spiegel, the learned editor and translator of the Avesta, had devoted a chapter of his last work, *Eran das land Zwischen dim Indus & Tigris* to the problem in question. We read the chapter, *Avesta die Genesis oder die Bezihomgen der Eranier Zu den Semiten* with the warmest interest and when we had finished it, we put down the book with the very exclamation with which we began our article."† Prof. Max Muller has, however, nothing to find fault with his adversary's scholarship and erudition. He says: "We do not mean to say anything disrespectful to Prof. Spiegel, a scholar brimful of learning, and one of the two or three men who know the Avesta by heart. He is likewise a good Semitic scholar and knows enough of Hebrew to form an independent opinion of the language, style, and general character of the different books of the Old Testament." Still he does not consider the evidence adduced by Prof. Spiegel to be sufficient, and counsels the learned Doctor to observe proper caution in deducing his conclusions. This is what he says: "But in a question like this.....it is absolutely necessary for a new witness to be armed from top to toe, to lay himself open to no attack, to measure his words and advance step by step in a straight line to the

* *Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I, p. 143.

† *Ibid*, p. 146.

point that has to be reached. A writer like Dr. Spiegel should know that he can expect no mercy, but invites the heaviest artillery against the floating battery which he has launched into the troubled waters of Biblical criticism."*

With all respect to the learned Professor we may remark that notwithstanding that large-hearted liberality, breadth of views, and sincere desire for truth which characterizes Prof. Max Muller's writings, his language in this place savours of a little impatience for criticism made on his own religion.

SECTION 2.—CHANNEL OF COMMUNICATION.

There is, however, to our mind, evidence enough to prove that Judaism is based mainly on Zoroastrianism. The similarities between the two religions are so many and so striking as to necessitate the conclusion that the ideas of one passed into the other. We wonder if Prof. Max Muller could deny this. But he says:—"Only before we look for such ideas, it is necessary to show the channel through which they could possibly have flowed either from the Avesta into Genesis or from Genesis into Avesta."†

Such a channel, however can be easily pointed out. Dr. Spiegel has tried to show that both Zoroaster and Abraham lived at the same time (about 1920 B.C. according to the Bible), and at the same place (Arran or Haran). The Bible tells us that Abraham resided at Haran,‡ while we learn from the Zend Avesta, that Zoroaster was born in *Aryanam Veiga*. Not only Prof. Max Muller but many other philologists are of opinion that *Aryanam Veiga*, (which means 'the seed of Aryans')

* *Chips*, Vol. I, pp. 146-147.

† *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 149.

‡ *Vide* Genesis, XII, 4.

must have been situated to the extreme east of Persia, between the Oxus and Jaxartes, and was so called because it was the Aryan home from which both the Indian and Iranians came. Dr. Spiegel thinks that the Persian *Arran* is only a contraction of the older name *Aryanam Veiga*. Prof. Max Muller acknowledges the probable accuracy of this hypothesis; says he:—"Dr. Spiegel says that Zoroaster was born in Arran. This name is given by mediæval Mahomedan writers to the plain washed by the Araxes, and was identified by Anquetil Duperron with the name *Arvan Veiga*, which the Zenda Avesta gives to the first created land of Ormazd. We think that Dr. Spiegel is right in defending the geographical position assigned by tradition to Aryan Veiga.....Nor do we hesitate that the name (Aryan Veiga, *i.e.*, the seed of the Aryans', might have been changed into Arran."* Prof. Max Muller, however, does not concur with Dr. Spiegel in holding that Haran and Arran are identical. He objects: "Then how are the aspirate, and a double *r* to be explained." With due deference to the Professor's erudition we feel bound to remark that this is but weak criticism. As regards the double *r* it is to be noticed that it occurs in the Persian Arran and not in the Hebrew Haran. And it is a well-known fact that words passing from one language into another, generallly tend to become simpler in their sounds, and drop one of the components of their compound or double consonants. The following examples will illustrate the point:—

Sanskrit.	Prakrita or Pali.	Hindi.
(Sarva सर्व)	Sabba सब्ब	Sab सब
(Satya सत्य)	Sachcha सच्च	Sach सच
(Kshetra क्षेत्र)	Khetta खेत्त	Khet खेत

* *Chips*. Vol. I. pp. 140.

The other part of the question, "How is the aspirate to be explained?" might perhaps appear to be a serious objection. But there are numerous examples of words which take an aspirate in passing into another language. For example, the Zend word for seven '*hapta*' (Sans. *sapta*) is changed into Persian *Haft*; Zend '*kasura*,' (Sans. *shwasura* meaning father-in-law) is changed into Persian *khusar*. It might be urged, however, that in *haran* it is the initial *h*. But there are examples of such a change also. For instance, Zend *ashta* (Sans *ashta* meaning 'eight') is changed into Persian '*hasht*;' Zend *ashta-iti* (Sans. *ashti* meaning 'eighty') into Persian *Hashtad*. Similarly Zend *asti* (Sans. *asti* meaning 'is') becomes in Persian alternatively *hast* and *ast*. Now it can hardly be denied that modern Persian language is derived from the older Zend language. Shall we then ask "How is the aspirate to be explained in these words," or, shall we on the strength of this objection deny the identity of Persian *hasht* and Zend *ashta*, Persian *hashtad* and Zend *ashata-iti* and so forth? Prof. Max Muller's objection, therefore, is hardly tenable and no cause seems to have been made out against Dr. Spiegel's hypothesis that Arran and Haran are identical.

Prof. Max Muller himself suggests another channel. Says he: "Dr. Spiegel having, as he believes, established the most ancient meeting point between Abraham and Zoroaster, proceeds to argue that whatever ideas are shared in common by Genesis and the Avesta must be referred to that very ancient period when personal intercourse was still possible between Abraham and Zoroaster, the prophets of the Jews and the Iranians.....Now it is known that about the same time and the same place, namely, at Alexandria where the Old Testament was rendered into Greek, the Avesta also was translated into the same language, so that we

have at Alexandria in the 3rd century B. C. a well-established historical contact between the believers in Genesis, and the believers in the Avesta, and an easy opening for that interchange of ideas which according to Dr. Spiegel, could have taken place now here but in Arran and at the time of Abraham and Zoroaster."

This might be taken as a fresh evidence of further exchange of ideas having taken place at a later period between the two religion: but it does not, in our humble opinion, rebut Dr. Spiegel's position that an interchange must have taken place as early as the time of Zoroaster and Abraham themselves. In fact it is hard to understand how the Professor's suggestion can fully explain the community of ideas between the Genesis and the Avesta, since according to Prof. Max Muller, these two books were only translated, and not compiled at Alexandria in the third century before Christ. Dr. Spiegel's view that Abraham and Zoroaster were contemporaries is also corroborated by close resemblance, that we find in the characters of the two prophets. Professor Max Muller himself confesses: "We agree with Dr. Spiegel that Zoroaster's character resembles most closely the true Semitic notion of a prophet. He is considered worthy of personal intercourse with the Ormuzd. He receives from Ormuzd every word though not, as Dr. Spiegel says, every letter of the law." †

In fact so close is the resemblance that Dr. Haug remarks: "In several Mohammedan writings, especially in Vernacular Persian dictionaries, we find Zoroaster or, as he is there called, Zardushta, identified with Abraham the patriarch."

---

* *Chips*, Vol. I, pp. 150-151.

† *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 158.

‡ Haug's *Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings and Religion of the Parsis*, p. 16.

Another opening for the flow of Zoroastrain ideas into Judaism is to be found in the historical event called the Babylonian Capavity. In 587 B. C. the Babylonian king Nebuchadnezzar invaded Palestine, reduced Jerusalem, took many of the Jews to his capital, destroyed their literature, and held them in captivity. About a century later Cyrus, the king of Persia, overthrew the Babylonian empire and allowed some of the Jews to return to Jerusalem with the object of re-establishing the Hebrew literature. It was after this return to Jerusalem that Ezra and Nehemiah edited and compiled in 450 B. C. the Old Testament or according to those who deny the Mosaic authorship, it was then that they wrote the Pentateuch. Thus the most ancient books of the Jews must have been written, or at any rate, remodelled, after they had long lived among the Zoroastrains,

Madame Blavatsky not only supports this view but goes further in thinking that the whole story of Moses is a fabrication—a mere imitation of the story of the Babylonian King Sargon. "Ezra..... remodelled the whole Pentateuch. For the Glyph of Pharoah's daughter (the woman), the Nile (the Great Deep and Water) and the baby boy found floating therein in the ark of rushes, has not been primarily composed for or by Moses. It has been found anticipated in the Babylonian fragments on the tiles in the story of King Sargon, who lived far earlier than Moses. Now what is the logical inference? Most assuredly that which gives us the right to say that the story told of Moses by Ezra had been learnt by him while at Babylon, and that he applied the allegory told of Sargon to the Jewish law-giver. In short, the Exodus was never written by Moses but refabricated from old materials by Ezra."* Then in a footnote wherein she quotes

* *Secret Doctrine*, Vol.I pp. 319-320.

from Mr. George Smith's Assyrian Antiquities the Madame adds :—

"The capital of Sargon, the Babylonian Moses, was the great city of Agadi, called by the Semitics Akkad mentioned in Genesis x : 10, as the capital of Nimrod. Akkad lay near the city of Sippora on the Euphrates north of Babylon.* Another strange *coincidonce* is found in the fact that the name of the neighbouring city of *Sippora* is the same as the name of the wife of Moses *Zipporah*.† Of course the story is a clever addition of Ezra who could not be ignorant of it. This curious story is found in fragments of tablest from Kanyungik and reads as follows : —

(1) Sargona, the powerful king, the king of Akkad am I.

(2) My mother was a princess, my father I did not know. A brother of my father ruled the country.

(3) In the city of Azupiran, which is by the site of the river Euphrates.

(4) My mother, the princess, conceived me In difficulty she brought forth.

(5) She placed me in an ark of rushes; with bitumen my exit she sealed up.

(6) She launched me in the river which did not drown me.

(7) The river carried me to Akki, the water-carrier, it brought me.

---

* *Isis Unveiled*, Vol. II. pp 442-443.

† Exod. II.

(8) Akki, the water-carrier, in tenderness of bowels lifted me, &c., &c."

And now Exodus II:—

'And when she (Moses 'mother) could no longer hide him, she took for him an ark of her rushes, and dobbed it with slime and with pitch, and put the child therein, and she laid it in the flags by the river's brink.'"*

We thus see that there is no difficulty in pointing out the channel through which the Jews could have borrowed their ideas from the Parsis. We shall now proceed to show the SIMILARITY OF DOCTRINES between the two religions. That they have many common doctrines has long been suspected even by Christian writers. Dr. Haug, a celebrated authority on the Parsi religion, admits this. After stating that the Zoroastrian religion was not so opposed to the Mosaic as the other ancient religions, he goes on to say: "The Zoroastrian religion exhibits even a very close affinity to or rather identity with several important doctrines of the Mosaic religion and Christianity such as the personality and attributes of the Devil, and the resurrection of the dead which are both ascribed to the religion of the Magi, and are really found in the present scriptures of the Parsis."†

We shall now treat of these common doctrines one after another.

SECTION 8.—THE IDEA OF GOD.

That the Bible and the Zend Avesta teach very much the same conception of the Deity is admitted by Dr. Haug in the clearest terms. He says: "Spitama Zarathushtra's conception of Ahura

* *Secret Doctrine*, Vol. I, pp. 319-320.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 4.

Mazda as the Supreme Being is perfectly identical with the notion of Elohim (God) or Jehova which we find in the books of Old Testament. Ahura Mazda is called by him the creator of the earthly and spiritual life, the lord of the whole universe in whose hands are all the creatures. He is the light and source of light; He is the wisdom and intellect."*

It is not a little remarkable that this similarity extends even to the names of the Deity which occur in the Bible and the Zend Avesta. In the Harmuzd Yashta of the Zend Avesta, Ahura Mazda enumerates twenty of his names. The first is *Akmi* (Sanskrit *Asmi*) "I am." The last is *Ahmi yad Ahmi* (Sanskrit *Asmi yad Asmi*) "I am that I am." Both of these phrases are also the names of the Jehova in the Bible:

And God said unto Moses:—I AM THAT I AM *ehyeh usher ehyeh*. And he said; Thus shalt thou say unto the children of Israel; I AM hath sent me unto you."† The similarity in these names is too striking to be accidental.

Dr. Spiegel is of opinion (though Prof. Max Muller holds it doubtful), that the word Ahura (the principal name of the Deity in the Zend Avesta) is identical in meaning with the word Jehova. "Ahura he (Dr. Spiegel) says, as well as Ahu, means lord and must be traced back to the root *ah*, the Sanskrit *as* which means '*to be*,' so that Anura would signify the same as Jehve, *he who is*."‡

The high reverence paid to the fire by the Parsis is only too well-known. The days are gone by when the Zoroastrians here stigmatized as fire wor-

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 30.

† Exodus, III, 14.

‡ *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 158.

shippers; yet it must be admitted that they regard fire as the highest manifestation of God and his power. Yasna XXXVI—1, is entitled "to the fire as the symmbol of Ahura Mazda who appears in his blazing flame." It is hardly just to say that it amounts to worshipping fire. And if it be so then, as H. P. Blavatsky truly remarks, "The Christian who says 'God is a living fire' and speaks of the penticostal 'tongues of fire' and of the 'burning bush of Moses' is as much a fire worshipper as any other heathen."* In Deutronomy it is said: "The Lord thy God is a consuming fire."† Thus like the Zend Avesta, the Bible also describes God as fire. In fact in the Pentateuch God generally appears in the form of fire, or encompassed by fires. For example, we read in Exodus: "And the Lord said unto Moses, lo! I come unto thee in a thick cloud that the people might hear when I speak with thee and believe thee for ever. And Moses told the words of the people unto the Lord. And it came to pass on the third day in the morning that there were thunders and lightning, and a thick cloud upon the mount, and the voice of the trumpet exceeding loud,, so that all the people that was in the camp trembled. And Mount Sinai was altogether on a smoke, because the Lord descended upon it in fire and the smoke thereof ascended as the smoke of a furnace, and the whole mount quaked greatly."‡ Again—"And the sight of the glory of the Lord was like devouring fire on the top of the mount in the eyes the children of Isreal."§ With these verses before his eyes who will not see in Jehova an imitation of the Zoroastrian Ahura Mazda?

---

* *Secret Doctrine*, Voi. 1, p. 121.

† Deut., IV, 24.

‡ Exodus, XIX, 9, 16, 18.

§ Exodus, XXIV, 17.

SECTION 4.—THE IDEA OF TWO POWERS: GOD AND THE DEVIL.

This Zoroastrian dogma has likewise become an essential doctrine of Judaism, Christianity, and Mahommedanism. It is thus summed up by Prof. Darmesteter:—"The world such as it is now, is twofold, being the work of two hostile beings, Ahura Mazda, the good principle, and Angra Mainyu, the evil principle. The history of the world is the history of their conflict, how Angra Mainyu invaded the world of Ahura Mazda and marred it, and how he shall be expelled from it at last."*

This is also what Christians say of their God and Satan, and it need hardly be stated that as Ahura Mazda is the prototype of Jehova, so is Angra Mainyu the exact prototype of the Biblical Satan.

That the two conceptions are indentical, is admitted by Dr. Haug in very plain terms:—"Their views of Angra Mainyu," says he, "seem to differ in no respect from what is supposed to be the orthodox Christian view of the Devil."† And again he says:—"The Zoroastrian idea of the devil and the infernal kingdom coincides entirely with the Christian doctrine.—The Devil is a murderer and father of lies according to both the Bible and the Zend Avesta,"‡

In the Bible Satan appears as a serpent. In Zend Avesta also he is the "burning serpent,' *Azhidahak*, (which word has probably given rise to the Persian word "Azdaha," a huge serpent or a dragon).

---

* Zend Avesta, Part I, Introdnctio n, p. lvi.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 53.

‡ *Ibid*, p. 309.

In the next chapter we shall seek to prove that the religion of the Zend Avesta is derived from the Vedas. But we may take this opportunity of showing how this idea of two contending powers in the world, though apparently peculiar to Zoroastrianism, can be traced to a beautiful allegory in the Veda, *viz.* the war of *Indra* and *Vrittra*.

This allegory which is very famous in Vedic literature* has, like most other parts of the Veda, a two-fold meaning,—an *exoteric* interpretation and and *esoteric* one, or as they are more appropriately called in Yaska's Nirukta, a *physical* meaning आधिदैविक, and a spiritual meaning आध्यात्मिक. According to the physical interpretation Indra is the sun; Vrittra means literally a coverer (from *vri*, to cover) and is an epithet of the cloud which covers the sun. The sun sheds its bright light and genial heat upon this earth, and gives life to all animals and vegetables. Vrittra covers the sun and prevents its light and heat from coming to us and produces darkness though only temporarily. Thus a constant war is going on in the physical world between Indra, the source of light, and Vrittra the cause of darkness. When Vritta gets the upper hand the sun is obscured and the world is enveloped in darkness. But ultimately Indra gets the victory; Vrittra is destroyed and falls down on the earth in the form of rain. Indra again appears in all its glory, and shines in its full lustre—all the more brilliant after he has destroyed his foe. It is this physical phenomenon which forms the *exoteric* or the *physical* interpretation of the allegory.

According to the *spiritual* meaning, *Indra* is God, the giver of light and giver of life, the source of all knowledge, all virtue, all righteousness, all happiness,—in short the source of all good. *Vrit-*

Vide Rig Veda Mandal I, Sukta 32.

tar then is the opposite principle, the principle of evil and darkness. As a perpetual struggle is going on in the physical world between light and darkness, so an eternal war is being waged in the moral world between good and evil. As the sun illuminates the physical world, so does God, who is good and holy, the source of all spiritual light, brighten our intellect, enlighten our understanding and inspire our hearts with righteous motives. But the sun is sometimes hidden by clouds and then darkness envelopes the earth. Similarly the sun of righteousness is sometimes eclipsed by the clouds of wicked passions, and then darkness overspreads the soul. Lust, anger, greed, hate, jealousy, and the numberless temptations of the world forming the army of Vrittra besiege our soul and try to destroy the light of God which is enshrined there. Thus a struggle ensues between *Indra* and *Vrittra*. The human soul becomes a battlefield where the armies of *Indra* and *Vrittra* stand face to face. The soul, sometimes willingly yields to the cunning, wily, insidious and the serpent-like *Vrittra*. The result is moral anarchy and the reign of evil. The powers of *Indra*, *viz.*, virtuous and righteous feelings retire from the soul which is no longer a fit abode for them, leaving it a prey to the powers of evil to which it has so readily abandoned itself. The light of *Indra* no more shines on the soul; a sort of moral darkness is produced in which the soul, unable to distinguish between right and wrong, plunges itself into the depths of vice and misery. From this wretchedness it is raised by the beneficient power of God after it has reaped the harvest of its evil choice.

This is the struggle between good and evil which is always going on in this world—the moral struggle of which we are conscious at every moment of our lives. It is this which makes the practice of virtue

so difficult in this world and which is so beautifully protrayed in the above allegory.

One of the many names of *Vritra* in the Veda is "Ahi"* meaning in classical Sanskrit also a serpent.† It is this name which appears in the Zend Avesta, as "Azhi" or "Azhidahak" (Sanskrit *Ahidahaka*). Perhaps the two meanings of the Vedic word *Ahi* had little to do with each other. But in Zend Avesta, they are altogether confounded, and Angra Mainyu or the evil principle is often described as a serpent The Zoroastrian religion lent this doctrine to Judaism which in its turn gave it to Christianity and to Mahomedanism. Hence all the three Semitic religions represent the evil principle as a serpent. Professor Max Muller, though unable to gainsay these facts, raises this objection against the above hypothesis:—"But does it follow, because the principle of evil in the Avesta is called serpent, or "Azhidahaka," that therefore the serpent, mentioned in the Third Chapter of Genesis, must be borrowed from Persia. Neither in the Veda nor in the Zend Avesta does the serpent ever assume that subtle and insinuating form which it wears in Genesis."‡ This is as much as to say that a son should be *exactly* like the father, or that the imitation should *in no way differ* from its original! Later on, however, the learned Professor seems to admit the probable accuracy of this hypothesis—"In later books such as Chronicles xxi, 1, where Satan is mentioned as provoking David to murder Israil (the very same provocation which in 2 Samuel xxiv is ascribed to the anger of the Lord to murder Israel and Judah), and in all the passages of the New

* *E.g.*, see Rig Veda, Mandal I, Sukta 32, verses, 1, 2, 5,. *vide* also Nighantu I, 10.

† See Amara Kosho I, viii, 6.

‡ *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 155.

Testament where the power of evil is spoken of as a person, we may admit the influence of Persian ideas and Persian expressions though even here strict proof is by no means easy..... .....As to the serpent in Paradise, it is a conception that might have sprung up among the Jews as well as among the Brahmans."*

Is then the religion of the Vedas as dualistic as that of the Koran, the Bible and the Zend Avesta? No. And herein lies the superiority of Vedic theism to that of the other three books.

It should be clearly understood that the Vedic Vrittra or Ahi is not real a and separate being endowed with distinct personality like God. He is only a personification of the negative and abstract conception, the absence of righteousness or godliness. The allegorical description of the moral struggle required that the source of good being a person, the principle of evil should at least be personified. But in the Zend Avesta the Azhi has already acquired a sort of quasi-personality, while in the Bible and the Koran Satan is almost as real a personage as God himself and altogether distinct from him.

The argument underlying this dualistic conception of God and Satan seems to be this:—In this world we find both good and evil; and as God is the source of good, so there must be a second porson who is the source of evil; this second person is Satan. But the idea is utterly unphilosophical. One might as well argue: Light and darkness are two opposite things. The sun is the source of light; therefore there must be some other heavenly body which is the source of darkness. The fallacy

* *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 155.

lies in the false assumption that light and darkness are two separate things. In point of fact light is the real thing, while darkness is only a name given to the absence or abnegation of light. Similarly, righteousness is the real thing, while unrighteousness is only the absence of righteousness. Where the sun shines, there is light; where the sun's rays do not reach, there is darkness. Similarly, the soul which is illuminated by the light of God is righteous—while that soul which does not receive or accept divine light is unrighteous and may be said to be in darkness.

Even in the Zend Avesta the personality of Satan is doubtful. Professor-Darmesteter, L. H. Mills and many other scholars affirm it; but Dr. Haug denies it in the following clear terms:—"A separate evil spirit of equal power with Ahur Mazda and always opposed to him is entirely foreign to Zoroastrian theology, though the existence of such an opinion among the ancient Zoroastrians can be gathered from some of the later writings, such as Vendidad."*

Thus according to Dr. Haug Angra Mainyu is not a separate person; but there is no questioning the personality of the Biblic and the Koranic Satan. This shows how a sublime truth of the Vedas has first been misunderstood, and slightly changed, and then degenerated into a ridiculous myth and unphilosophical dogma.† This also illustrates how the doctrines of the other religions of the world which appear peculiar to them are only perverted forms of the Vedic truth.

---

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 303.

† This Vedic allegory has similarly degenerated in the *Puranas* where the gods headed by their king Indra are represented as warring with the demons or *asuras*.

Section 5.—Angels.

It has been already said in Chapter II, section 1 that the idea of angels which the Jews lent to Mahomedanism is identical with the Zoroastrian conception of the "Yazatas."

"The Jews," says Dr. Sale," learnt the names and offices of those beings (angels) from the Persians as they themselves confess (Talmud Hieros in Rosthashan). The ancient Persians firmly believed the ministry of angels and their superintendence over the affairs of this world (as the Magians still do), and therefore assigned them distinct charges and provinces, giving their names to their months and the days of their months. Gabriel they called Sarush, and Ravan Baksh or the *giver of souls*, in opposition to the contrary office of the angel of death to whom among other names they gave that of Mardad, or the *giver of death.* Michael they called Beshter who, according to them, provides sustenance for mankind. The Jews teach that the angels were created of fire, that they have several offices, that they intercede for men and attend them. The angel of death they name Dumae and say he calls dying persons by their respectiv, names at their last hour."*

The Parsis also believe in seven archangels (*viz.*, Vohu-Manu, Asha-Vahishta, Kshattra-Vairya, Spenta-Armaiti, Haurvatad, and Amertad with Ahur Mazda as their head), who are called the

* Sale's *Koran*, Prel., Dis. p. 56.

Ameshaspentas.* The Rev. L. H. Mills says that "the idea.....as giving the designation spirit to the Amesha-spentas may well have been the original of the seven spirits [in the Bible] † which are before the throne of God."‡

SECTION 6.—COSMOGONY.

According to the Zend Avesta the world was made in six periods. The order in which the different parts of the universe were created is substantially the same as that given in the Bible. In order that the reader may be better able to see the similarity

---

* According to Dr. Haug, the Amesha-spentas rightly understood are no separate beings, but only represent the best gift which Ahura Mazda confers on his true worshippers. Says he:—

"The several names by which we find the Amesha-spentas called, *viz.*, Vohu-Manu, Asha-Vahishta, Kshattra-Vairya, Spenta-Armaiti, Haurvatad, Amertad, are frequently mentioned in the Gathas; but they are, as the reader may clearly see from the passages, (see Yass XLVII: 1), as as well from the etymology, nothing but abstract names and ideas representing all the gifts which Ahura Mazda as the only Lord grants to those who worship him with a sincere heart by always speaking truth, and performing good actions. In the eyes of the prophet they were no personages, that idea being imported into the sayings of the great master by some of his successors"—(Haug's *Essays*, pp. 305-306).

The meanings of the six names given above are as follow:—
Vohu-Mano=The good mind.
Asha-Vahishta=The best truth or righteousness.
Kshattra-Vairya=Abundance of every earthly good.
Spenta-Armaiti=Devotion or piety.
Haurvatad=Health.
Amertad=Immortality.

† *Vide* Revel, VIII, § 2.

‡ Zend Avesta, Part III, p. 145.

between the two accounts, we place them side by side:—

Zoroastrian account of Cosmogony. (*As summed up by Dr Haug*)	Mosaic account of Cosmogony.
In the *first* period heavan was created; in the *second*, the waters; in the *third*, the earth; in the *fourth*, the trees; in the *fifth*, the animals; and in the *sixth*, man.*	On the *first* day heaven and earth were created; on the *second*, firmament and waters; on the *third*, dry land, grass, the birds and fruit trees; on the *fourth*, lights, the sun, the moon, the stars; on the *fifth*, moving creatures, winged fowls, great whales; on the *sixth*, living creatures, cattle, creepers, beasts, men.†

Profeassor Max Muller, while reviewing Dr. Spiegel's work, makes the following remarks on this similarity:—"We proceed to a second point—creation as related in Genesis and the Avesta. Here we certainly find some curious coincidences. The world is created in six days in Genesis, and in six periods in the Avasta, which six periods together form one year. In Genesis the creation ends with the creation of man, so it does in the Avesta. On all other points Dr. Spiegel admits the two accounts differ, but they are said to agree again in the temptation and the fall. As Dr. Spiegel has not

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 192

† *See* Genesis I, 1-26.

given the details of the temptation and the fall from the Avesta, we cannot judge of the points which he considers to be borrowed by the Jews from the Persians."*

Even laying aside the disputed agreement in point of the temptation and the fall, there is, to our mind, still a resemblance between the above two accounts of cosmogony which is too close to be accidental.

It will be seen that the Zoroastrian account of cosmogony is essentially in accordance with the researches of physical science, which have established that the formation of a nebulous mass was the first stage in the creation, or more accurately speaking, evolution of the universe; that it was in a subsequent stage that our planet was detached from the whole mass and formed into a separate globe; and that vegetables, animals, and men were then formed in successive age, one after the other.

The *Yajur Veda* also describes the creation of the universe in the same order :—

ततो विराडजायत* विराजो अधिपूरुषः ।
स जातो अत्यरिच्यत पश्चाद् भूमिमथो पुरः ॥
तस्माद् यज्ञात् सर्वहुतः संभृतं पृषदाज्यम् ।
पशूंस्ताँश्चक्रे वायव्यानारण्या ग्राम्याश्च ये ॥
तं यज्ञं बर्हिषि प्रौक्षन् पुरुषं जातमग्रतः ।
तेन देवा अयजन्त साध्या ऋषयश्च ये ॥
यजु० अ० ३१ मं० ५, ६, ९,

"Then a shining† (or nebulous) mass was produced. This shining mass was supervised by the

* *Chips.* Vol. I, p. 154.

† विराट is derived from वि (prefix) + राज to shine, and is, therefore, interpreted to mean a shining mass.

Supreme Spirit. Subsequently from this mass were separated the earth and other bodies. By that Adorable Being worshipped by all were then produced the vegetables forming food, etc. He also made the animals, those of the air, those of the forest and domesticated ones. He also created men including sages and seers who by contemplation, then worshipped Him, the Adorable, and Supreme Spirit existing from the beginning."*

It will be noticed that the Zoroastrian account is more consistent with the Vedic account. The fact is that Zoroastrian cosmogony, of which Mosaci account is rather an imperfect copy, is itself founded on Vedic cosmogony.†

SECTION 7.—RESURRECTION.

"THE resurrection of the dead," says Dr. Haug "is a genuine Zoroastrian doctrine."‡ Again he says:—"The belief in the resurrection of the body at the time of the last judgment also forms one of the Zoroastrian dogmas."§

The Jews who, as has been already shown, || lent this doctrine to the Christians and Mahommedans, had themselves borrowed it from the Parsis. We may quote from the Zend Avesta: "This splendour attaches itself to the hero (who is to rise out of the

* Yajur Veda, XXXI: 5, 6 and 9.

† For a fuller account of Vedic cosmogony, in its relation to the Zoroastrian, the reader is referred to section 7 of Chapter V.

‡ Haug's *Essays*, p. 216,

§ *Ibid*, p. 311.

|| *See* Chapter II, Section 2.

number) of prophets (called Saoshyants) and to his companions, in order to make life everlasting, undecaying, imperishable, imputriscible, incorruptible, for ever existing, for ever vigorous, full of power (at the time) when the dead shall rise again, and imperishableness of life shall commence, making life lasting by itself (without further support). All the world will remain for eternity in a state of righteousness; the devil will disappear from all those places whence he used to attack the righteous man in order to kill (him), and all his brood and creatures will be doomed to destruction."*

Here we find at once the doctrines of the coming of Messiah (called Saoshyant in the Parsi Scriptures), the Millenium, and the Resurrection exactly as they are taught in the Bible.

The Jews are also indebted to the Parsis for most of the details connected with this dogma. For instance, the Jewish idea of *the balance* in which every man's actions will be weighed on the day of judgment is originally a Zoroastrian doctrine. Says Professor Darmesteter in his prefatory note to Yasht XII :— "Rashmi Razista, 'the truest truth,' is the genius of Truth. He is one of the three judges of the departed with Mithra and Sraosh. He holds the balance in which the deeds of men are weighed after death. 'He makes no unjust balance.....neither for the pious nor yet rulers; as much as a hair's breadth he will not vary, and he shows no favour' (Minokhirad II, 120-121.)"† Again the idea of *the Bridge* of Hell which men

* Zamyad Yasht XIX, 89-90.

† Zend Avesta, Part II, Rosh Yasht, p. 168,

will have to pass after their resurrection is also borrowed from the Zoroastrian, as already observed in Chap., II, section 2 (iii).

The late Dr. A. Kohut Chief Rabbi of Belgrade in this Essay published in *Zeitschrift Der Deutschen Morgenlandischen Gesellschaft*, *confesses the indebtdness of the Jews to the Parsis about some other minor details connected with this doctrine. We shall instance a few of the points noticed by him:—

(1) According to both religions the soul hovers round the body for three days after death. The learned Rabbi quotes from a Parsi Scripture, *Sadder Bundehesh :* " The soul remains for three days in this world at that spot where it had taken its departure from the body. It seeks the body and hopes that it may be possible once more to enter the body "† (*vide* also Vendidad xix, 91-96, where the same thing is taught). Dr. Kohut compares with the above the following extract from Jerus, Berach. ‡ The soul " hovers round the body for three days long unwilling to be separated therefrom."

(2) According to a Parsi book *Jamaspname*, "in the last days great miseries are to fall on men; plagues and diseases will prevail. The armies of the Greeks, Arabs and Romans are to fight great battles

* *The part taken by the Parsi religion in the formation of Christianity and Judaism.* Translated from the German of the late Dr. Kohut, Chief Rabbi, Belgrade Printed at Bombay Fort Printing Press Parsee Bazar Street, Fort, 1899, A.D.

† Quoted on page 7 of the above.

‡ *Ibid*, page 13.

on the banks of the Euphrates." * Dr. Kohut speaks of similar wars predicted in the Jewish books and says: "These wars...will herald the coming of the times of the Messiah; it will become a saying: 'When kingdoms war with one another, hope for the Advent of the Messias' (*c.f.* Genes. Rabha, Ch. 42). The Midrasch (Jalkut, § 359) follows the *Jamaspname* in making the warring nations: the Persians, the Arabs, and the Romans."†

(3) "So further," says Dr. Kohut, "as the tradition of the Parsis maintains that before Soashyant two prophets (saviours) are to come to herald the time of the Messias and to prepare the road;" so too the Midrasch Jalk, Jesaj § 305, 518 states:—"Therefore before the actual saviour there are to be two forerunners in the persons of the Messias Joseph and the son of the Messias Ephraim."‡

(4) "Also the many times repeated statement (Midrasch Gen. R. C. 98, Midr. Jalk, Ps. § 682: Midr. Ps. C. 21) that the Messias will bring three commandments (or rather each Messias one commandment apiece) recalls to mind similar belief of the Parsis that each saviour will bring a *nosk* not yet revealed."§

(5) In 31st Chapter of the *Bundehesh* the question is asked: "The body which the wind has carried away and the waves have swallowed how will it be recreated, how will the resurrection of the dead take place?" To this answered Ormazd: "When through

* Quoted on page 22.

† *Ibid*, page 24.

‡ Quoted on page 24.

§ *Ibid*, page 26.

me the corn which is laid in the earth grows again and comes once more to life, when I have given to the trees veins according to their kinds,.....when I have placed the child in the mother;.....when I have given to the waters feet that they might run, I have created the clouds which take up the water of the earth and send it down again in rain where I will, ...when I have created each and all of these things, would it be harder for me to bring about the resurrection ?.....Remember, all this has been once and I have created it and can I not recreate what has already been? "

"All these points," says Dr. Kohut, recur in the Talmud and the Midrasch. The simile of the seed of corn which is laid in the lap of the mother earth and afterwards shoots out into countless blades is often instanced as a proof of the Resurrection." *Cf.* Synh. 90 *b* ; Ketub III *b* : Pirke D. R. Ebzir C, 33 . " When the seed of the wheat which was buried naked in the earth springs up in the manifold clothings of the blades,—how much more will the virtuous rise again, who have been interred in their vestments." As the ***Bundehesh*** compares the miracle of the Resurrection with the miracle of Birth and of Rain, exactly so does the Talmud Taanith 2 *a* : Synh. 113 *a* : "Three keys lie in the hands of God, and are entrusted to no delegate; these are : (1) the key of the Rain ; (2) that of Birth; (3) that of the Resurrection." So in the Midrasch Deuter. Rabba C. 7 and Genes Rabbi C. 13 in which exactly, as in the *Bundehesh*, the miracle of

the Resurrection is contrasted with the other two, and is judged the less difficult of accomplishment." *

SECTION 8.—FUTURE LIFE: HEAVEN AND HELL.

The Jewish belief in a future life and in Heaven and Hell coincides in all its detail with what we find in the Zend Avesta, and is obviously borrowed from it. Dr. Haug says :—

"The idea of a future life and the immortality of the soul is very distinctly expressed already in the Gathas and pervades the whole of the later Avesta literature. The belief in a life to come is one of the chief dogmas of the Zend Avesta."†

And further :—

"Closely connected with this idea is the belief in Heaven and Hell, which Spitama Zarathushtra himself clearly pronounced in his Gathas. The name for Heaven is Garo-de-mana (Garotman in Persian) house of hymns' because the angels are believed to sing hymns there (*see* Yas xxviii, 10; xxxiv, 2) which description agrees entirely with the Christian idea as founded in Isaiah VI and the Revelation of St. John."‡

The close similarity which exists between the description of the paradise and the pleasures of heaven as given in the Jewish books and the same as given in the Parsi books has already been noticed in Chapter II § 2 (iv). We may also mention another simila-

*Quoted on pp. 27:28.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 311.

‡ Haug's *Essays*; p. 31.

rity noticed by Dr. Kohut. Says he: "The idea of the heaven of Eden being composed of precious stones is, I am positive, also taken from the Persians." The same idea is found in the beginning of Ch. 31 of the *Bundehesh* where it is said: "When through me the heavens in a spiritual state, glittering with precious stones, without pillars are permanent." According to the Minokhired, p. 136, the heavens are composed of a steel coloured substance which is also known as diamond" (Spiegel's Commentor, Uber das Avesta, p. 449). The idea that the heavens consist of precious stones was so current that the Zend, 'Heaven,' and the 'Stone' were expressed by one and the same word, *Asman*."*

About the seven divisions of heaven, Dr. Kohut says: "As we meet with them in the later Parsi system so too in the Talmud (Chap. 12 *b*) we have the names of the seven heavens, six of which correspond to the Biblical names."†

The similarity in the Parsi and Jewish accounts of *heli* and its seven-fold divisions has already been noticed in Chap. II, 2 (*v*).

The doctrine of eternal reward and punishment is probably also borrowed from the Zend Avesta. For instance, we find in *Gatha Ushtavaiti*: "The soule of the righteous attains to immortality, but that of the wicked man has everlasting punishment.

---

* Dr. A. Kohut's *Essays*, p. 36.

† *Ibid*, page 16.

Such is the rule of Ahura Mazda, whose the creatures are."*

The Chrstian idea of salvation by Faith is also found in the Zend Avesta: "Happiness and Immortality will be the lot of the faithful."†

Section 9.—Sacrifice.

The practice of sacrifice, common among the Jews, was an imitation of the Zoroastrian practice which again is only another form of the Vedic *yajna* or *agnihotra*. *Agnihotra* occupies a very prominent place in the Vedic rituals, and has a whole mass of literature devoted to it. It is one of the five essential duties (*panch mahayajnas*) of the Aryas, which are to be performed daily. Every morning and evening the Aryas of the Vedic times said their prayers to God, and poured in fire offerings of clarified butter and fragrant things, in order to purify the atmosphere, and thus benefit all sentient beings. Besides daily *agnihotra* there were special *yajnas* to be performed on special occasions and festivities. Such was, for example, the *Chaturmasya Ishti* performed in the rainy season.

The Parsis, who learnt this practice from the Vedic Aryas, as they did the other practices and doctrines of their religion, attached as great an importance to it as the Indian Aryas. But it is doubtful whether its true meaning was understood, and the ceremony at last degenerated among the Parsis, as it

* Gatha Ushtavaiti, Yasna XLV, 7.

† Zend Avesta, Part III, p. 21 ; Yasna XXXI.

did in our own country about the time of Buddha, into an unmeaning ritual. Still they clung to it fast and performed it with scrupulous punctuality. This is, perhaps, the chief reason why they came to be regarded as fire-worshippers. The Parsis taught this ceremony to the Jews and in their hands the ceremony became more corrupt. Being addicted to a flesh diet, the Jews made their offerings of flesh. Still the offerings were made through fire—an undeniable proof of the Zoroastrian origin of their ceremony. There are very clear proofs of it in the Bible. For instance, God says to Moses:—"An altar of earth thou shalt make unto me, and shalt sacrifice thereon thy burnt offering and the peace offerings, thy sheep and thine oxen in all places where I record my name, I will come unto thee and I will bless thee."*

Again we read in Genesis—"And Noah builded and altar unto the Lord; and took of every clean beas and of every clean fowl, and offered burnt offerings on the altar."†

The Mahomedans who borrowed this ceremony from the Jews, and not directly from the Zoroastrains could not understand the use of fire in it, and therefore dispensed with fire in their sacrifices, thus making them consist in the mere slaughter of an animal, What a sad change from the performance of the pures and beneficial ceremony of *agnihotra* to mere shedding of innocent blood!

---

* Exodus xv : 24.

† Genesis viii : 20.

SECTION 10.—SOME MINOR SIMILARITIES.

Besides these similarities in doctrines and religious practices, we might notice some others in minor points. For example—

(i) In the Bible we are told that God gave His ten commandments to Moses on the Mount Senai.

Thus we read: "And Moses went up unto God and the Lord called unto him out of the mountain saying, 'Thus shalt thou say to the house of Jacob and tell the children of Israel.'"*

"And Moses went up unto the mountain and a cloud covered the mount."†

Similarly in the Zend Avesta we find Ahura Mazda conversing with Zarathushtra on the 'mountain of the holy questions.' "Now he converses with Ahura on the mountain of the holy questions."‡

(ii) The story of the Ark of Noah bears a striking resemblance to that of the Vara of Yima in the Zend Avesta. The Bible tells us :—"God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth.....And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved Him at His heart."

And the Lord said I will destroy man, whom I have created, from the face of the earth, both man and beast, and the creeping things and the fowls of the air, for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord.....And God said unto Noah :—'The end of all flesh is come before me.' Make thee an ark of gopher wood ; rooms shalt thou

* Exodus xix. 3.
† Exodus xii. 15.
‡ Fargard xii. 19.

make in the ark. And behold, I, even I, do bring a flood of waters upon the earth, to destroy all flesh, wherein is the breath of life, from under heaven; and everything that is in the earth shall die. But with thee I establish my covenant, and thou shalt come into the ark, thou and thy sons and thy wife, and thy son's wives with thee. And of every living thing of all flesh, two of every sort shalt thou bring into the ark, to keep them alive with thee; they shall be male and female. Of fowls after their kind, and of cattles after their kind, of every creeping thing of the earth after its kind, two of every sort shall come unto thee to keep them alive."*

Similarly in the Zend Avesta, Ahura Mazda informs Yima who is "the first man, the first king and the founder of civilization"† that the world is to be destroyed by "fatal winters."‡ "And Ahura Mazda spake unto Yima, saying O fair Yima, son of Vivanghat! Upon the material world the fatal winters are going to fall that shall bring the fierce foul frost; upon the material world the fatal winters are going to fall, that shall make snow-flakes fall thick even an aredvi deep on the highest top of mountains.

And all the three sorts of beasts shall perish."

Then Ahura Mazda advises Yima to make a *vara* in which to take shelter together with a pair of every living creature:

"25. Therefore make thee a *vara* long as a riding ground on every side of the square; and thither

* Genesis vi. 5-8; 13-20.

† Zend Avesta, Port I, p. 10.

‡ Some commentators translate the original expression into "rains," *vide* foot-note on p, 16 of Zend Avesta, Part I.

bring the seeds, of sheep and oxen, of men, of dog, of birds, and of red blazing fires.

" 27. Thither shalt thou bring the seeds of men and women, of the greatest, best and finest kind on this earth ; thither thou shalt bring the seeds of every kind of cattle.

" 28. Thither thou shalt bring the seeds of every kind of tree; thither thou shalt bring the seeds of every kind of fruit, the fullest of food and sweetest of odour. All these seeds shalt thou bring, two of every kind, to be kept inexhaustible there so long as those men shall stay in the *vara.*"*

The similarities are obvious enough. Prof. Darmesteter observes : " The *vara* of Yima came to be nothing more than a sort of Noah's Ark."†

The story of the flood is also to be found in Shatapatha Brahmana (I, 8 ; i. 1) which, next to the Vedas, is one of the oldest books in Sanskrit literature. We are told there that a fish informed Manu—

" In such and such an year the flood would come ;
Therefore construct a ship and pay me homage.
When the flood rises, enter thou the ship.
And I will rescue thee. So Manu did."‡

We are further told that the flood had swept away all creatures, but that Manu having been saved in his ship became the progenitor of the present race of men.

(iii) Dr. Spiegel finds a resemblance also between the Garden of Eden and the Paradise of Zoroastrians. The two rivers of the Garden of Eden, the Pishon and

* Fargard II, Zend Aves'a. Part I, pp. 15-17.

† Zend Avesta, Part I, p. 11

‡ Metrical version by Monier Williams—*See Indian Wisdom* second edition, p. 33.

Gihon, mentioned in the Bible * have been identified by him with the Indus and the Jaxartes, and the two trees in Eden, the tree of knowledge, and the tree of life, are identified with the painless tree and the Gao-Karena, bearing the white Hoama. With regard to the two rivers, Prof. Max Muller says:—"We believe with him (Dr. Spiegel) that there is little doubt as to the Pishon being the Indus and the Gihon, the Jaxartes."† About the identification of the two trees, however, he remarks: "But we confess that until we know a good deal more about these two trees of the Iranians, we feel no inclination whatever to compare the painless tree and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, though perhaps the white Hoama tree might remind us of the tree of life, considering that Hoama, as well as the Indian Soma, was supposed to give immortality to those who drank its juice."‡

Section 11.—Summary.

We have seen that the Jews have borrowed the essential doctrines of their religion from the Zoroastrians. It may well be asked: What is there original in Judaism? What is there in it which is independent of Zoroastrianism, and for which it might claim to be a *new* and special revelation of God? The Christians and the Jews will perhaps answer that the superiority of Judaism, and its claim to divine origin lies in its teaching a better monotheism than the dualistic creed of the Parsis. To this we reply that —to make no mention of Christain theism with its

* Genesis ii: 11-13.

† *Chips*, Vol. I, p. 156.

‡ *Chips*, Vol. I, pp. 156-57.

mysterious and inconceivable doctrine of trinity—even Judaism cannot boast of a higher and purer conception of God than Zoroastrianism. In a paragraph, part of which we have already quoted, Dr. Haug remarks :—" Spitama Zarathustra's conception of Ahura Mazda as the Supreme Being is perfectly identical with the notion of Eloheim (God) or Jehova which we find in the books of Old Testament. Ahura Mazda is called by him the creator of the earthly and spiritual life, the lord of the whole universe, in whose hands are all the creatures. He is the light and source of light; he is wisdom and intellect. He is in possession of all good things, spiritual and worldly, such as the good mind (*vohu-mâno*), immortality *(amartad)*, health *(haur vatad)*, the best truth *(asha-vahista)*, devotion and piety *(armaiti)*, and abundance of every earthly good *(kshattra-vairya)*. All these gifts he grants to the religious man who is upright in thoughts, words, and deeds. As the ruler of the whole universe, he not only rewards the good, but he is a punisher of the wicked at the same time—*see* Yas. xliii : 5. All that is created, good or evil, fortune or misfortune, is his work.—Yas. xlviii : 4. A separate evil spirit of equal power with Ahura Mazda, and always opposed to him, is entirely foreign to Zoroastrian theology, though the existence of such an opinion among the ancient Zoroastrians can be gathered from some of the later writings, such as Vendidad."*

Elsewhere he observes : " That his theology was mainly based on monotheism, one may easily ascertain from the *Gathas*, specially from the second."† We

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 30.
† Haug's *Essays*, p. 301.

quote verse 6 of the Ahura Gatha:—"You cannot belong to both of them *i.e.*, you cannot be worshipper of one true God and of many gods at the same time."* This is very clear. Indeed we shall look in vain in the Bible for a more emphatic and unambiguous statement of monotheistic doctrine.

As regards the charge of dualism, so often laid at the door of Zoroastrianism, we may say that neither Christianity nor Judaism, nor even Mahomedanism is free from it. Dr. E. W. West in his Introduction to the Translation of Pahalvi Texts (*Sacred Books of the East Series*) candidly says: "The reader will search in vain for any confirmation of the foreign notion that Mazda worship is decidedly more dualistic than Christianity is usually shown to be by orthodox writers, or for any allusion to the descent of the good and evil spirits from a personification of 'boundless time,' as asserted by strangers to the faith."† Nay, the dualism of the Bible and the Koran is only a grosser form of Zoroastrian dualism which is more philosophical than the former. Nothing can be clearer than the following words of Dr. Haug: "The opinion so generally entertained now that Zoroaster was preaching a dualism, that is to say, the idea of two originally independent spirits, one good and the other bad, utterly distinct from each other, and one contradicting the creation of the other, is owing to a confusion of his philosophy with his theology. Having arrived at the grand idea of the unity and indivisibility of the Supreme Being, he undertook to solve the great problem which has engaged the attention of so

* Quoted by Dr. Haug in his *Essays*, p. 150.

† Quoted in Dr. S. A. Kapadia's "Teachings of Zoroaster and the Philosophy of the Parsi Religion," pp. 27-8.

many wise men of antiquity and even of modern times, *viz.*, How are the imperfections discoverable in the world, the various kinds of evils, wickedness, baseness, compatible with the goodness, holiness and justice of God?—This great thinker of remote antiquity solved this difficult question philosophically by the supposition of two primeval causes, which, though different, were united and produced the world of material things as well as that of the spirit; which doctrine may best be learnt from Yas. XXX (*see* pp. 149-151.)

"The Ahura Mazda, who produced the reality (*gaya*) is called *Vohu-mano*, "the good mind." The other through whom "non-reality" *(ajyaiti)* originates, bears the name *Akam-mano*, "the evil mind." The good, true and perfect things which fall under the category of reality are the productions of the good mind; while all that is bad and delusive belongs to the sphere of non-reality, and is traced to the evil mind. They are the two moving causes in the universe united from the beginning, and therefore called the Twins *(Yima*, Sanskrit *yamau)*. They are present everywhere in Ahura Mazda as well as in man.

"These two primeval principles, if supposed to be united in Ahura Mazda himself, are not called *Vohu-mano*, and *Akam-mano* but *Spenta-mainyush*, the beneficent spirit and *Angra-mainyush*, the hurtful spirit. That '*Angra-mainyush*' is no separate being opposed to Ahura Mazda, is to be gathered unmistakably from Yas. XIX: 9 (*see* p. 187), where Ahura Mazda is mentioning his two spirits, who are inherent in his own nature, and are in other passages (Yas. LVII: 2; *see* p. 189) distinctly called the two creators and the two masters *(payu)*.....*Spenta-*

mainyush was regarded as the author of all that is bright and shining, of all that is good and useful in nature, while *Angra-mainyush* called into existence all that is dark and apparently noxious. Both are inseparable as day and night and though opposed to each other, are indispensable for the preservation of creation.

"Such is the original notion of the two creative spirits who form only two parts of the Divine being. But in the course of time this doctrine of the great founder was changed and corrupted in consequence of misunderstandings and false interpretations. *Spenta-mainyush* was taken as a name of Ahura Mazda himself, and then, of course *Angra-mainyush*, by becoming entirely separated from Ahura Mazda, was regarded as the constant adversary of Ahura Mazda. Thus the dualism of God and Devil arose."*

Thus, according to Dr. Haug's view, Zoroastrian conception of *Angra-mainya* is only an attempt at an explanation of some hard problems in philosophy. But this can hardly be said of the Biblical Satan whose separate personality is beyond question. We, therefore, fail to see how Judaism can pretend to teach a better monotheism than Zoroastrianism. Indeed the Zoroastrian conception of God is, in several respects, superior to the Jewish conception of the avenging, vascillating and wrathful Jehovah. The dualism mentioned above is the only defect which mars, to a certain extent, the sublimity of Zoroastrian monotheism. We shall see in the next chapter that Vedic theism alone is free from this defect, and that alone is, therefore, the truest and purest, the most consistent and most philosophical monotheism.

* Haug's *Essays*, pp. 30-33.

CHAPTER V.

ZOROASTRIANISM IS BASED ON THE VEDIC RELIGION.

We now come to the last link in the chain of our argument, *viz.*, the Vedic origin of Zoroastrianism. We shall begin with

Section 1.—The Similarity between the Vedic and Zend Languages.

THE similarity is so striking that Sir William Jones the celebrated founder of the Asiatic Society, exclaims:—"When I perused the Zend Glossary, I was inexpressibly surprised to find that six or seven words in ten are pure Sanskrit, and even some of their inflections formed by the rules of the Vyacaran as Yushmacam, the genitive plural of Yushmad."*

A more celebrated authority on Zoroastrian religion and literature, *viz.*, Dr. Haug remarks:—

"The relationship of the Avesta language to the most ancient Sanskrit, the so-called Vedic dialect, is as close as that of the different dialects of the Greek language (Æolic, Ionic, Doric, or Attic) to each other. The languages of the sacred hymns of the Brahmans and of those of the Parsis are only the two dialects of the separate tribes of one and the same nation. As the Ionians, Dorians, Æolians, etc., were different tribes of the Greek nation, whose general name was Hellenes, so the ancient Brahmans and Parsis were

* Asiatic Researches, II, § 3, quoted by Darmesteter in Zend Avesta, Part I, Introduction, p. xx.

two tribes of the nation which is called Aryas, both in the Veda and Zend Avesta."*

Of the grammatical forms, Dr. Haug says :—

"They are so very similar, even when not quite identical, that they are readily recognised by anyone who has a slight knowledge of Sanskrit. The strongest proof of the original identity of Sanskrit and Avesta grammatical forms is their harmony even in irregularities. Thus, for instance, the deviation of the pronominal declensions from that of the nouns are the same in both languages, as *ahmai*, 'to him' =Sans. *asmai; kahmai*, 'to whom'=Sans. *kasmai; yaisham*, 'of whom' (pl.)=Sans. *yesham*. Also in declension of irregular nouns we find *Span*, "dog"= Sans. *Shvan*; sin. nom. *spa*=Sans. *shva*; accusative *spanem*=Sans. *shvanam;* dative *sune*=Sans. *shune*; genetive *suno*=Sans. *shunas*; pl. nom. *spano*=Sans. *shvanas;* gen. *sunam*=Sans. *shunam*; likewise *pathan*, 'path'=San. *pathin;* sing. nom. *panta*=Sans. *panthas*; inst. *patha*=Sans. *patha*; pl. nom. *pantano*= Sans. *panthanas*; acc. *patho*=Sans. *pathas*; gen. *patham*=Sans. *patham*."†

In nouns, he adds, "where three numbers and eight cases can be distinguished, it agrees almost completely with Vedic Sanskrit."‡

The Rev. L. H. Mills, the learned translator of the Zend Avesta (*(Sacred Books of the East Series)*, says; "I have also, on the other hand, turned a large

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 69.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 72.

‡ *Ibid*, p. 68.

portion of the *Gathas* into Vedic Sanskrit. (This, however, is practically a universal custom, as all words are compared with the Vedic, so far as analogies exist between the *Gathas* and the *Riks*.")*

Prof. Max Muller says :—

" It is clear from his (Eugene Burnouf's) works and from Bopp's valuable remarks in his ' Comparative Grammar ' that Zend in its Grammer and Dictionary is nearer to Sanskrit than any other Indo-European language ; many Zend words can be retranslated into Sanskrit simply by changing the Zend letters into their corresponding forms in Sanskrit.....It differs from Sanskrit principally in its sibilants, nasal and aspirates. The Sanskrit *s*, for instance, is represented by the Zend *h*.....Where Sanskrit differs in words or grammatical peculiarties from the northern members of the Aryan family, it frequently coincides with Zend. The numerals are the same up to 100. The name for thousand, however, *sahasra*, is peculiar to Sanskrit and does not occur in any of the Indo-European dialects except in Zend, where it becomes *hazanra*."†

To give the reader a clearer idea of the remarkably close relationship between the two languages, we subjoin a list of some important words showing their Shanskrit and Zend forms side by side, and also noting the slight verbal or phonetic alteration which a word undergoes when passing from Sanskrit into Zend.

---

* Zend Avesta, part III. Preface, p. xv.

† *Chips*, Vol. I, pp. 82-83.

The more important words appear in italics :—

(1) Sanskrit S (स) is changed into Zend *H*—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Asura	असुर	*Ahura**	Lord ; give of breath or life.
Soma	सोम	*Homa*	A healing plant.
Sapta	सप्त	Hapt (*Pers.* Haft)	Seven.
Masa	मास	Maha (*Pers.* Mah)	Month.
Sena	सेना	Hena	An army.
Asmi	अस्मि	Ahmi	I am.
Santi	सन्ति	Henti	They are.
Asu	असु	Auhu†	Life ; breath
Vivasvat	विवस्वत्	*Vivanhuat*†	The sun ; also a proper name.

*The word *asura* असुर is derived from असु (breath or life)+रा to give+ङ (suffix) ; or असु (life) + रम to please or enjoy+ङ. It literally means " Giver of life." In later Sanskrit the word has come to be nsed in a bad sense being a synonym of *Rakshasa* राक्षस an evil being. The idea then is " one who takes pleasure in, or enjoys, his present life disregarding the next or future life one who only cares for his body and not for the spirit " But in the Vedas it is frequently used for God. We quote Dr. Haug : " In the older parts of the Rig Veda Samhita, we find the word *Asura* used in as good and elevated sense as in the Zeud Avesta. The chief gods such as *Indra* (R V. I, 54 3) *Varuma* (R. V. I, 24, of 14 ; *Agni* (R. V. IV. 2, 5, VII,. 2, 3,) *savitri* (R. V. I, 35, 7): (*Rudr*) ro *Shiva* (R, V, V, 42, 11) etc., are honoured with the epithet *Asura* which means (living,) ' spiritual'. signifying the divine, in opposition to human nature." (Haug's *Essays*, pp. 268-269.)

† Sometimes the Sanskrit *s* when changed into the Zend *h* takes *n* before it, *i.e.*, becomes a nasal *h*, as in Anhu and Vivanhuat.

(2) Sanskrit *H* (ह) is changed into Zend *Z*—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Hridaya	हृदय	Zardaya	Heart.
Hasta	हस्त	Zast (*Per.*) Dast	Hand.
Varaha	वराह	Varaza	A boar.
Hota	होता	*Zota*	One who pours offering into the sacred fire.
Ahuti	आहुति	*Azuti*	
Hima	हिम	Zima	
Hve	ह्वे	Zbe	
Bahu	बाहु	Bazu	
Ahi	अहि	*Azi*	(2) The evil principle. (3) Cloud.
Medha	मेधा	*Mazda*	Wisdom; God who is All-wise.

(3) Sanskrit *J* (ज) is changed into Zend *Z*—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Jana	जन	Zana	To produce.
Vajra	वज्र	Vazra	Thunderbolt.
Jivha	जिह्वा	Hizva* (Pers. Zaban)	Tongue.
Aja	अजा	Aza	Goat.
Janu	जानु	Zanu	Knee.
Yajna	यज्ञ	*Yasna*	Worship sacrifice.
Yajata	यजत	*Yazata*	Worthy of worship; angels.

* The more closely allied form would be *Zivha*. But the consonants have changed places. This is very common in philological changes. *Cf.* Sanskrit *Chakra* चक्र meaning a circle or cycle and Zend *Charkha*; Sanskrit *Vakra* वक्र English curve; Sanskrit *Kashyapa* which comes from *Pashyaka* (one who sees all)

(4) Sanskrit *Shva* श्व is changed into Zend *Spa*—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Vishva	विश्व	Vispa	All.
Ashva	अश्व	Aspa	Horse.
Shvan	श्वन	Span	Dog.
Krishashva	कृशाश्व	*Gereshaspa*	The name of a king.

(5) Sanskrit *Shva* श्व or *Sva* स्व is sometimes changed into Zend *q*—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Shvasura	श्वसुर	Qusura (Pers. khusar.)	Father-in-law
Svapna	स्वप्न	Qafna	(1) Dream.
Svapa	स्वाप	Khvab (Pers.)	(2) Sleeping; dreaming.

(6) Sanskrit *T* त is changed into Zend *Th*—

Sanskrit		*Zend*	*Meaning*
Mitra	मित्र	*Mithra* (Pers. Mihir.)	(1) A friend. (2) The sun. (3) God.
Trita	त्रित	*Tritha*	A physician.
Traitana	त्रैतान	*Thraitana* (Pers. Faridun.)	Do.
Mantra	मंत्र	*Manthra*	A sacred verse.

(7) Many words of Sanskrit have passed into Zend without any change; while others have under gone only a slight phonetic change in vowel, etc.—

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Pitar	पितृर (पितृ)	Pitar (Pers Pidar)	Father.
Matar	मातृर (मातृ)	Matar (Pers. Madar)	Mother.
Bhratar	भ्रातृर (भ्रातृ)	Bratar (Pers. Biradar.)	Brothe

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Duhitar	दुहितर	Dughter (Pers. Dukhtar)	Daughter.
Pashu	पशु	Pashu	Animal.
Go	गो	Gao (Pers. Gao)	Cow.
Ukshan	उक्षन्	Ukshan	Ox.
Sthura	स्थूर	Stoara	Steer.
Makshi	मक्षी	Makhshi (Pers. Magas)	Fly, bee
Sharada	शरद	Saredha (Pers. Sard)	Winter.
Vata	वात	Bada (Pers. Bad).	Wind.
Abhra	अभ्र	Abra (Pers. Abra)	Cloud.
Yava	यव	Yava	Barley.
Vaidya	वैद्य	Vaidhya	Physician.
Ritvija	ऋत्विज्	*Rathvi*	Priest.
Namaste	नमस्ते	*Namaste**	I bow to thee.
Manas	मनस	*Mano*	Mind; thought.
Yama	यम	*Yima*	Ruler; the name of a king.
Varuna	वरुण	*Varena*	Names of the Deity.
Vrittrahan	वृत्रहन्	*Virithraghna*	
Vayu	वायु	*Vayu*	
Aryaman	आर्य्यमन्	*Airyaman*	
Armati†	अर्मति	*Armaiti*	(1) Devotion; obedience. (2) Earth.

* We may quoted from *Atarsh Yasht*, where the expression occurs. "Namaste atarsh, Mazda Ahurahya."

† "Armati, a female spirit in the Vedas, meaning :—(*a*) 'devotion, obedience' (Rig Veda VII, 1, 6, 34, 21); (*b*) 'earth' (Rig Veda X, 92, 4, 5,) apparently identical with the archangel Aramaiti which name has, as the reader will have learnt from the third *Essays*, exactly the same two meanings in the Zend Avesta"—(Haug's *Essays*, p. 274).

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Ishu	इषु	Ishu	Arrow.
Ratha	रथ	Ratha	Chariot.
Rathastha	रथस्थ	*Rathaistha*	Charioteer; warrior.
Gandharva	गान्धर्व	*Gandharva*	
Prashna	प्रश्न	Frashna	Question,
Atharvan	अथर्वन	*Athravan*	Priest.
Gatha	गाथा	*Gatha*	A hymn; a sacred song.
Ishti	इष्टि	*Ishti*	Act of worshipping, or making offerings.
Apamnapat	अपांनपात	Apamnapat	The lightning borne in the clouds.
*Chhandas**	छन्दः	Zend	(1) Metrical language. (2) Divine knowledge.

* Dr. Haug derives the word '*Zend*' from the root *zan* (corresponding with Sanskrit *jan* ज्ञा to know), and interprets it to mean 'knowledge,' like the Sanskrit word "Veda." We, however, agree with Professors Max Muller that it comes directly from the Sanskrit word "*Chhandas*." Says he:—"I still hold that the name of *Zend* was originally a corruption of the Sanskrit word छन्द *Chhandas* (*i.e.* metrical language, *Cf. Scandere*), which is the name given to the language of the Veda by Panini, and others. When we read in Panini's grammar that certain forms occur in *Chhandas* but not in the classical language, we may almost always translate the word छन्द *Chhandas* by *Zend*, for nearly all these rules apply equally to the language of the *Avesta*."—(*Chips from a German Workshop*, Vol. I, pp. 84-85).

It is noteworthy that the word *Zend* is used for the religious scriptures of the Parsis as well as for the language in which they are written. The reader need hardly be told that the word '*Chhandas*' is used in exactly the same double sense (meaning the *Vedas* as well as the *Vedic language*).

Sanskrit.		*Zend.*	*Meaning.*
Avastha	अवस्था*	Avesta	What is established.
Indra	इन्द्र	Indrao†	
Deva	देव	Daiva†	

It will not be uninteresting, if we here quote one or two verses of the Zend Avesta and re-translate them into Sanskrit, so as to enable the reader to see at a

---

* About the derivation of the word "Avesta," Dr. Haug remarks:

"It might best be traced to *Ava* + *sta*, in the sense of "what is established" or "text," as was proposed by Mr. J. Muller in 1839. ... A more satisfactory meaning can be obtained by tracing *avistak* to *a*+*vista* (past participle of '*vid*' वेद् 'to know'), with the meaning 'what is known,' or 'knowledge' corresponding nearly with *Veda*, the name of the sacred scriptures of the Brahmans."—(Haug, p. 121).

This latter etymology seems to us rather far-fetched,—a strained and (as we think) unsuccessful attempt to trace the word "Avesta" to the very root (*vid*, "to know"), from which the word "Veda" is derived We agree with Mr. Muller and hold that *Avesta* is only another form of Sanskrit अवस्था *Avastha* (the Sanskrit root स्था *stha*, to stand, assuming the form *sta* in Zend).

The Sanskrit word अवस्था is still used in the sense of 'stability' or fixity,' and though its use in the sense of "established law or order" is not familiar, we do use व्यावस्थ (which is the word *avastha* with only the prefix *vi* added to it) in that sense (*vide* Apte's Sanskrit-English Dictionary).

† These two words have in Zend come to be used in a bad sense *Daiva* meaning an 'evil spirit,' and *Indra* meaning the king of evil spirits. The reader will be strikingly reminded of how the word *Asura* has been similarly degraded in later Sanskrit. From the degeneration of these three words, some of the European scholars conclude that there was at some time probably a split between the Indians and the Zoroastrians. Professor Darmesteter, however, rejects this theory of a religious schism. (See *Zend Avesta*, Part I, Introduction, pp. lxxix to lxxxi)

glance how slight a difference there is between the two languages:—

Zend.	Vedic Sanskrit.
(*1*) *Vispa drukhsh janmaite* All (every) evil spirit is slain.	*Vishva duraksho jinvati.* **बिश्व दुरक्षो जिन्वति**
Vispa drukhsh nashaite All (every) evil spirit goes away.	*Vishva'duraksho nashyati.* **विश्व दुरक्षो नश्यति**
Yatha hamoti aisham vacham When he hears these words. (Yasna XXXI, verse 8, quoted in Haug's *Essays*, p. 196).	*Yada shrinoti etam vacham.* **यदा श्रृणोति एतां वाचम्**
(*2*) *Tad thwa persa ersh* That I thee I will ask right	*Tat twa prashta ritam* **तत् त्वा प्रष्टा ऋतम्**
mai vacha [illegible] Ahura me tell O Ahura!	*me vacha asura* **मे वच असुर ?**
Kasma zatha pita What creator father	*Konah janita pita* **को नः जनिता पिता**
ashahya paurvyo of righteousness first	*Ritasya paourvyah* **ऋतस्य पौर्व्यः**
Kasma queng starancha Who the sun and stars	*Konah Kan (or swah?) taranshcha* **को नः कं (स्वः ?) तारांश्च**
dad advanam made path ?	*dad adhvanam* **दादू अध्वानम्**
Ke ya mao ukhshyati Who that the moon increases	*Ko yo masam ukshyati* **को यो मासं उक्ष्यति**
nerefasti thwad wanes besides thee	*nirapasyati tvat* **निरपस्यति त्वत्**
Tachid Mazda vasemi Such things Mazda I wish	*Tadrik Medha vasmi* **तादृक् मेधा वश्मि**
anyacha viduye and others to know	*anyachcha vittava* **अन्यच्च वित्तवे**
—*Ushtavaiti Gatha*, Yas. XLIV, 3, quoted by Dr Haug in his *Essays*, p. 144.)	

SECTION 2.—SIMILARITY IN VERSIFICATION.

It is not a little remarkable that the Zend Avesta bears a close similarity to the Vedas also in versification. Dr. Haug remarks :—" As to the metres used in the Gathas, we find them of the same nature as those which are to be found in the Vedic Hymns."*

Rev. Mills observes : " The Vedic hymns sung in metresare closely similar to those in both the Gathas and the later Avesta."†

Of the *Gatha Spentamainyu*, for instance, he say : " Its metre may be said to be *tristup*, as its lines have each eleven syllables and are arranged in stanzas of four." ‡

Of *Ushtavaiti Gatha*, Yasna xliv, 3, which has been quoted above (in section I) and translated into Vedic Sanskrit, Dr. Haug says :—" This metre (consisting of five *padas* of eleven syllables each) is very near to the Vedic *trishtubh*, which consists of four *padas*, each comprising eleven syllables which make forty-four in all. The *Ushtavaiti Gatha* only exceeds it by one *pada* of eleven syllables. In the third Gatha called the *Spentamainyu*, however, the *trishtubh* is completely represented, as each verse there comprises four *padas*, each of eleven syllables, in all forty-four just as many as the *trishtubh* is compossed of ." §

About Yasna xxxi, verse 8, also quoted and, translated into Sanskrit above (in section I) Dr. Haug remarks :—" It stands nearest to the *gayatri* metre,

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 143.

† Zend Avesta, Part III, Preface, p. xxxvi.

‡ *Ibid*, p. 145.

§ Haug's *Essays*, p. 145.

which consists of 24 syllables divided into three *padas*, each comprising eight syllables."*

Of Fargard xix, Dr. Haug says:—"The song is composed in the heroic metre of the ancient Aryans (the *anushtubh*) which has given rise to the common *shloka*."†

Again: "The metre of *Homayasht* is very near *anushtubh*."‡

He further writes:

"Among the metres used in the Yajur Veda, we find several which are marked by the epithets *asuri*: such as *gayatri asuri*, *ushnih asuri*, *pankti asuri*: these *asura* metres..... .. ..are actually to be found in the Gatha literature of the Zend Avesta .. ...The *gayatri asuri* consists of fifteen syllables, which metre we discover in the Gatha Ahunavaiti, if we bear in mind that the number of sixteen syllables of which it generally consists is often reduced to fifteen (*cf.*, for instance, Yasna xxxi. 6 and the first two lines of xxxi). The *ushnih asuri*, consisting of fourteen syllables, is completely extant in the Gatha Vohukhshathra (Yas. II), each verse of which comprises fourteen syllables. The *pankti asuri* consists of eleven syllables, just as many as we found in the Gathas Ushtavaiti, and Spentamainyu."§

SECTION 3.—"ARYAS" THE COMMON NAME OF FOLLOWERS OF BOTH RELIGIONS.

The reader need hardly be told that the forefathers of those who are now styled Hindus were called

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 144.

† *Ibid*, p. 252.

‡ *Ibid*.

§ *Ibid*, pp. 271-72.

Aryas* in ancient times. But it is not equally well-known that the ancient Parsis also called themselves Aryas.

The term *Arya* occurs in many parts of the Zend Avesta. We shall quote a few verses:—

"To the glory of the Aryas."—(Sirozah I, 9)†

"To the glory of the Aryas made by Mazda."—(*Ibid* I, 25).‡

"We sacrifice unto the glory of Aryas made by Mazda."—(Sirozah II, 9) §

"The swift archer, the Arya amongst the Aryas."—(VIII, Yast. 6).‖

"How shall the countries of the Aryas grow fertile."—(*Ibid*, 9).¶

"Let the Aryan nation bring libation unto him."—(*Ibid*, 58.)**

"For his brightness and glory I will offer unto him a sacrifice worth being heard, *viz.*, unto Mithra, the lord of wide pastures. We offer libations unto Mithra, the lord of wide pastures, who gives a happy dwelling and good dwelling to the Aryan nation."—(X, Yast. 4).††

"Ahura Mazda said: 'If men sacrifice unto Vre-treghna made by Ahura.....never will a hostile horde entre the Aryan countries, nor any

* According to the Vedas all mankind is divided into Aryas and non-Aryas. *E. g.*, see Rig Veda I, 10. 51 and 8.

विजानीह्यार्य्यान् ये च दस्यवः ।

† *Zend Avesta*, Vol. II, p. 7.
‡ *Ibid*, p. 11.
§ *Ibid*, p. 15.
‖ *Ibid*, p. 95.
¶ *Ibid*, Part II, p. 96.
** *Ibid*, p. 108.
†† *Ibid*, p. 120.

plague, nor leprosy, nor venomous plants, nor the chariot of a foe, nor the uplifted spear of a foe.'" —(Bahram Yast., 48)*

The whole of the xviii Astad Yasht is devoted to the glory of the Aryas. We quote the opening verse:—

"Ahura Mazda spoke unto Spitama Zaradushtra, saying:—

'I made the Aryan glory rich in food, rich in flocks, rich in wealth, rich in glory, provided with full store of intelligence, with full store of money to withstand need and to withstand enemies.' "†

Section 4. The Four-fold Classification of Society.

All scholars are now agreed in holding that the system of hereditary castes which forms the ugliest feature of the present Hindu society, and which is mainly responsible for the degradation of the Hindus, as a body, did not exist in the Vedic times and is not sanctioned by the Vedas. The Vedic classification of human society into Brahmans, Kshattriyas, Vaishyas and Sudras (of which the present caste system is a corruption) was something totally different. For a full treatment of the subject the reader is referred to the writer's pamphlet on "Caste system."‡ Briefly speaking the older Vedic classification differed from the present caste system in two important respects:—

(1) It classified all men into four groups only, *viz.*, the Brahmans, the Kshattriyas, the Vaishyas and

* *Zend Avesta*, Part II, p. 244.

† *Ibid* p. 283.

‡ *Caste System*: Its evils and remedies, published under the auspices of the Arya Tract Society by the Arya Pratinidhi Sabha, U. P. Price annas 4.

the Sudras. The classification went no further and the Vedas or other books of the Vedic literature do not give the least countenance to the endless subdivision which is now found in each principal caste, splitting up the society into numberless petty units and rendering all free intercourse impossible.

(2) It was based not on the accident of birth, but on the just and equitable principle of merits. In other words, if a man possessed the qualifications of a Brahman, *i.e.*, if he was possessed of learning, bore a righteous and pious character, and took upon himself the avocation of priest, teacher, or religious guide, he was classed as a *Brahman* even if he came of Sudra parents. If he choose a military career, he became a *Kshattriya*, no matter what his parentage was. If he took to trade and commerce, or took up agriculture, or studied and pursued any of the arts or other industrial occupations (which were not then looked down upon as unworthy of the twice-born classes), he was designated a *Vaishya*. If he was not possessed of the qualifications necessary for any of these three classes, and was only fit to serve them, he was termed a *Sudra*. The Vedic system of Varnas was thus entirely free from all the worst features which characterise the present caste system and which have made it (as Sir H. Maine has truly called it) "the most disastrous and blighting of human institutions." It did not condemn a man to a life of drudgery simply because he happened to be born in a Sudra family, nor elevate a man to an honoured and exalted position in society merely because he came of Brahman parents. On the other hand, it was only a classification of human

society on the principle of merits or personal qualifications, and was based on the doctrine of division of labour and co-operation to which all civilization owes its progress, and even its origin. The Vedic verse which the orthodox Hindus suppose to sanction the caste system really describes by anology to a human body, the functions which each of the four classes has to perform in the body politic. We quote it below :—

ब्राह्मणोऽस्य मुखमासीद् बाहू राजन्यः कृतः ।
ऊरू तदस्य यद्वैश्यः पद्भ्यां शूद्रो अजायत ॥

"The Brahmans are his (*i.e.*, of mankind personified) head; the Kshatriyas are his arms; the Vaishyas are his thighs; and the Sudras are his feet."*

The same four-fold classification of human society is to be found in the Zend Avesta. Dr. Haug remarks : "In the religious records of the Iranians, who are so nearly allied [to the Indians,] in the Zend Avesta, the four castes are quite plainly to be found, only under other names—(1) *Athrava* "priest" (Sanskrit Atharvan), (2) Rathaestao "warrior," (3) Vastriyofshyas "cultivator," (4) Huites (Pehl. Hutokhsh) "workman" —(Yasna 19, 17, Werterj)†

Prof. Darmesteter remarks in his translation of the Zend Avesta: "We find in it (the Dinkirt) a description of the four classes which strikingly reminds one of the Brahmanical account of the origin of castes (Chap. XLII), and which were certainly borrowed from India."‡

* The orthodox translation that the Brahmans sprang from the mouth of God, the Kshatriyas from his arms etc., is incorrect, and is not borne out by the context. For a full discussion on the subject and an exposition of this *mantra*, see the writer's Vedic Text No. 1 "Constitution of Human Society," published by the Arya Tract Society. Agra, Price 0-1-0.

† Quoted from Haug in *Muir's Sanskrit Texts*, Part II, p. 461.

‡ *Zend Avesta*, Part, I, Introduction, p. XXXIII.

We may also quote a verse from the Catechical Zend :

" (Question)—With what classes of men ?"

"(Asnwer)—The priest, the charioteer (as the chief of warriors), the systematic tiller of the ground, and the artisan... .....These are the classes and states in life, which give attention to the rulers, and fulfil the (laws of) religion, through whose actions the settle ments are furthered in righteousness."*

The four classes are mentioned also in the later scriptures of the Parsi religion, though the names have again changed. For example, in *Nama Mihabad* we read :—

"O ! Abad ! The will of God is not otherwise than the religion of the Abadis. Whoever out of the following four classes will tread this path, will attain to heaven: Horistaran, Nuristaran, Soristaru Rozistaran.† Sasan *V.* the last of the inspired writers of the Parsis, thus comments on the above :—

" *Horistaran* ‡ are called in Pahalvi *Rathornan.* They ars priests intended for protecting, strengthening and ascertaining religion, and also for helping in general administration."

" *Nuristaran* are called in Pahalvi *Ratheshtaram.* § They are kings and warriors, and are fit to be heads, chiefs, rulers, and administrators of the country.

" *Soristaran* are called in Pahalvi *Bastaryoshan.* They render all kinds of service."

---

* *Zend Avesta*, Part III, Catech. Zend 16.

† Nama Miahabed, 145.

‡ *Zend Athravan*=Sanskrit, *Atharvan, vide* Dr. Haug's remarks quoted above.

§ Zend *Rathèshtan*=Sanskrit *Rathasthas,* meaning literally charioteers or warriors.

Roziśtarân are called in Pahalvi *Hothhshan*. They follow the various kinds of occupatious and agriculture. And thou wilt not find any group of men out of or beyond these classes (*i.e.*, these four classes comprehend all mankind.)"

Who that is familiar with the Aryan system of four Varnas can doubt the Vedic origin of the above classification as given in the Parsi books?

It is interesting to note in this connection that like the twice-born (the first three classes) among the followers of Vedic religion, the Parsis are also enjoined to wear the sacred thread, which they call *kusti*. We quote from the Vendidad :—

"Zaradushtra asked Ahura Mazda : O ! Ahur Mazda ! through what is one a criminal worthy of death ?" Then said Ahura Mazda : "By teaching an evil religion !" Spitama Zaradushtra ! Whoever during three spring seasons does not put on the sacred thread (kusti), does not recite the Gathas, does not reverence the good waters, etc."

Section 5.—Conception of God.

Before proceeding to show the similarity between the Vedic and Zoroastrian teachings about God we consider it necessary to remove certain misconceptions which still prevail regarding the Vedic notion of the Deity.

The Vedas are not unoften charged with teaching polytheism, element worship, nature worship, and what not. The charge is, however, totally unjust. The mistake arises from confounding the two different senses in which such words as *surya*, *agni*, *indra*, *mitra*, and *varuna* are used in the Vedas. It is

Vendidad, Fargard XVIII.

an old and recognized canon of Vedic interpretation, the importance of which cannot be too much emphasized,* that all Vedic words are to be interpreted in their *yaugika* or derivative sense. As such, many words used in the Vedas bear two, and sometimes even more than two, significations. For instance, the word "*Indra*," which is derived from the root *idi*, 'to be glorious' (इदि ऐश्वर्य्ये) is used in at least three senses. It sometimes means the sun, which is possessed of glorious light; at other times it means the king who possesses earthly glory; at other times, again, it means God, whose glory is transcendental. The first Chapter of Swami Dayananda's *Satyarth Prakash* (or the Light of Truth) contains a learned exposition of the subject. Therein the author has given the derivative meanings of a number of such terms, showing unanswerably that, when used in connection with worship, all these words signify the one Almighty God. We give below a few of these expressions with their several meanings :—

1. *Indra*—(from *idi*, 'to possess glory')
   = (1) the sun ; (2) the king ; (3) God the glorious.
2. *Mitra*—(from *mid*, 'to be friendly')
   = (1) the sun ; (2) a friend ; (3) God the friendly.
3. *Varuna*—(from *vri*, 'to choose;' 'to cover')
   = (1) the sky ; (2) God, the greatest and the best.

* For a full exposition of the subject, we refer the reader to Pandit Guru Datta's *Terminology of the Vedas and European Scholars*.

4. *Agni*—(from *anchu*, 'to move;' 'to be present'; 'to know'; 'to worship')
   = (1) fire or heat, which moves fast; (2) God, the omnipresent and the adorable.
5. *Vayu*—(from *chidi*, 'to blow')
   = (1) wind; (2) God, the strong.
6. *Candra*—(from *chidi*, 'to please')
   = (1) the pleasing moon; (2) God the giver of all happiness.
7. *Yamu*—(from *yam*, 'to restrain,' 'regulate, 'rule' or 'control')
   =(1) a king; (2) God, the ruler of all.
8. *Kalu*—(from *kul*, 'to count')
   = (1) time; (2) God, the counter of all.
9. *Yujnu*—(from *yaj*, 'to worship'; 'to make offerings')
   = (1) the act of worshipping or making offerings; (2) God, the adorable.
10. *Rudra*—(from *rudir*, 'to weep')
    =(1) a king who chastises the wicked (2) God, the chastiser of the wicked.

There are other words which are generally used for God in the Vedas, but which European scholars, with their minds biased by Puranic mythology and the superstition and idolatry of modern Hinduism, sometimes intepret as names of different deities Such are, for example, the well-known words *Brahma Vishnu* and *Shiva* which, in the Puranas, stand for the three chief deities of Hindu pantheon. The intelligent reader need hardly be told that these notions

are quite foreign to the Vedas. Swami Dayananda Sarasvati derives and interprets them thus:—

Brhama—(from *brihi*, 'to be great')
=the Great Being.

Vishnu—(from *vish*, 'to enter;' 'to pervade')
=God, who prevades all things.

Shiva—(from *shiv*, 'to do good')
=God, who is the source of all good.

Shankar—also means literally, 'he who does good.'

Mahadeva—means literally, 'the great *deva*.'

Ganesha—means literally, 'the lord of all collected things.'

That all these terms signify one God is confirmed by the internal evidence of the Vedas. We quote from Rig Veda.—

इन्द्रं मित्रं वरुणमग्निमाहुरथो दिव्यः स सुपर्णो गरुत्मान् ।
एकं सद्विप्रा बहुधा वदन्त्यग्निं यमं मातरिश्वानमाहुः ॥
ऋग्वेद मं० १ स० १६४ मंत्र ४६

"That Supreme Spirit is the protector of all, and pervades and gives light to all bright things. He is called *Indra*, or the glorious; *Mitra*, or the friendly, *Varuna*, or the greatest and the best; *Agni*, or the adorable. Though one, He is called by the learned by many names, such as *Agni*, (the adorable *Yama* (the ruler); *Matarishva* (the mighty).'*

In another part of the same Veda we fined:—

सुपर्णं विप्रा कवयो वचोभिरेकं सन्तं बहुधा कल्पयन्ति ।
ऋग् मं० १० सू० ११४ मं० ५

"The learned and wise describe the one existing God in many forms of expressions.†

* Rig Veda. Mandala i, sukta 164, verse 46.
† Rig Veda. x 114, 5.

Again in the Yajur Veda we read:—

तदेवाग्निस्तदादित्यस्तदु वायुस्तदु चन्द्रमाः ।
तदेव शुक्रं तद् ब्रह्म ता आपः स प्रजापतिः ॥

यजु० अ० ३२ मं० १

"He is *Agni* (adorable); He is *Aditya* (imperishable); He is *Vayu* (omnipresent); He is *Chandrama* (the giver of happiness); He is *Shukra* (the creater); He is *Brahma* (the great); He is *Apah* (all-pervading) He is *Prajapati* (the lord of all creatures)."*

The above view is also corroborated by external evidence.

In Kaivalya Upanishad we find:—

स ब्रह्मा स विष्णुः स रुद्रः स शिवः सोऽक्षरः स
परमः स्वराट् । स इन्द्रः स कालाग्निः स चन्द्रमाः ॥

कैवल्योपनिषद्

"He is *Brahma* (the great); He is *Vishnu* (the prevader); He is *Rudra* (the chastiser); He is *Shiva* (the source of all good and happiness); He is *Akshara* (the never-perishing); He is the most high and self-effulgent; He is *Indra* (the glorious); He is *Kalagni* (the adorable and counter of all); He is *Chandrama* (the giver of happiness)"†

Again in Manu we read:—

प्रशासितारं सर्वेषामणीयांसमणोरपि ।
रुक्माभं स्वप्नधीगम्यं विद्यात्तं पुरुषं परम् ॥
एतमग्निं वदन्त्येके मनुमन्ये प्रजापतिम् ।
इन्द्रमेकेऽपरे प्राणमपरे ब्रह्मशाश्वतम् ॥

मनु १२ । १२२—२३

* Yajur Veda, xxxii, 1.

† Kaivalya Upanishad.

"One ought to know that Supreme Spirit Who is Ruler of all, subtler than the subtlest, of resplendent glory, and capable of being realised only by meditation. Some call him *Agni* (*i.e.*, 'adorable'); others call him *Manu* (*i.e.*, 'thinker'); and others *Prajapati* ('lord of creature'). Some again call him *Indra* (*i.e.* 'the glorious'); others *Prana* (*i.e.*, source of life'); and others, the eternal *Brahma* (*i.e.*, 'the great')."*

The mistranslation of the Sanskrit word *deva* or the cognate word *devata*, has been the most fruitful source of misconception on the subject under consideration. Till Swami Dayananda Saraswati revolutionized the public opinion by his masterly exposition of the true signification of the word *deva*,† it was a fashion among European Sanskritists to invariably translate it by "god." And as many things are designated *deva* or *devata* in the Vedas, it was easily taken for granted that the Vedas taught a belief in many "gods." In the entire range of Sanskrit literature the misinterpretation of no other single word has caused a greater misunderstanding of a great and ancient religion on a most material point.

The word *deva* is derived from the root *div* 'to shine,'‡ and therefore literally means a "shining" or bright thing, and hence in a secondary sense a thing possessed of bright qualities. As such, it is an epithet applied to the sun, the moon, and other forces of

* Manu, xii. 122-3.

† *See* Rig Vedadi Bhashya Bhumika, pp. 59-74.

‡ 'To shine' is the most ordinary meaning of the root *div:* It is, however, used in ten different senses. Says Panini, the celebrated grammarian, दिवु क्रीडाविजिगीषाव्यवहारद्युतिस्तुतिमोदमदस्वप्न कान्तिगतिषु "*Div* is used in the senses of sporting, desire, to conquer, pursuit, brilliancy, praise, pleasure, exhilaration, sleep, knowledge, motion and acquisition."

nature; *e.g.*, fire, wind, etc. For instance, we read in the Yajur Veda—

अग्निर्देवता वातो देवता सूर्य्यो देवता चन्द्रमा देवता विश्वे देवता रुद्रा देवतादित्या देवता मरुतो देवता विश्वेदेवा देवता बृहस्पतिर्देवतेन्द्रो देवता वरुणो देवता ॥ यजुः १४ । २०

Swami Dayananda Saraswati's writings have changed the whole current of thought on this point. In one of his latest writings, "India : what can it teach us?" in which the influence of Swami Dayananda's view is clearly discernible, Prof. Max Muller admits: "The dictionaries tell you that *deva* means God or gods, and so no doubt it does. But if we always translated *deva* in the Vedic hymns by God, we should not be translating but completely transforming the thoughts of the Vedic poets..... .....*Deva* originally meant *bright* and nothing else. Meaning bright, it was constantly used of the sky, the stars, the sun, the dawn, the day, the spring, the rivers, the earth; and when a poet wished to speak of all these by one and the same words—by what we should call a general term—he called them all *devas*."* Again he says:—"We must never forget that what we call gods in ancient mythology are not substantial, living individual beings of whom we can predicate this or that *Deva* which we translated by God is nothing but an adjective, expressive of a quality shared by heaven and earth, by the sun and the stars, and the dawn and the sea, *viz.*, brightness."†

The ancient Rishis cannot, therefore, be called polytheists or nature-worshippers, simply because they applied the term *deva* to the above-named objects of

* *India : What can it teach us?* By Prof. Max Muller, p. 218.

† *Ibid*, p. 159-160.

nature, any more than a man who says that the sun or the moon is " bright," or who speaks of a bright sky, or a brilliant victory, and so on.

Yaska, the greatest and most ancient authority on the Vedas, and the celebrated author of the Vedic lexicon (Nighantu), and Vedic Philology (Nirukta) in terprets the word *deva* in a still wider sense. He derives the word thus ;—

देवो दानाद्वा दीपनाद्वा द्योतनाद्वा द्युस्थानो वा भवति ॥

निरुक्त ७ । १५ ।

" That which confers some advantage upon us, can illuminate things, *i. e.*, explain or throw light on them, and that which is the source (lit., place) of light, is *deva.*'*

The word *deva* is, therefore, used for many other things. We shall give some of its most important meanings :—

(1) It is also used for parents and teachers inasmuch as they *confer innumerable advantages* upon us. In Tattiriya Upanishad,† the mother, father and teacher are called *devas* : —

मातृदेवो भव पितृदेवो भव आचार्य्यदेवो भव ।

तैत्तिरीय उपनिषद् अनु० ११

(2) It is also used for *learned men*, who have their minds *illuminated*, and who *explain things* to us. In Shatapatha Brahmana we read :—**विद्वाथसो हि देवाः** " the learned are the *devas.*"

(3) It is also used for the *senses* which *convey to us a knowledge of* material world. For example, in Yajur Veda we read :—

अनेजदेकं मनसो जवीयो नैनद् देवा आप्नुवन् पूर्वमर्षत् ।

यजुः अ० ४० मं० ४

* Nirukta, vii, 15.

† Tattiriya Upanishad, xi.

"God is one, He does not move, and yet is swifter than the mind; the senses (*devas*) cannot reach Him, though he is already in them." *

Again, in Mundaka Upanishad we read :—

न चक्षुषा गृह्यते नापि वाचा नान्यैर्देवैस्तपसा कर्मणा वा ।
ज्ञानप्रसादेन विशुद्धसत्त्वस्ततस्तु तं पश्यते निष्कलं ध्यायमानः ॥
मुण्डक २ । ८

"God cannot be attained or apprehended by the eye, nor by speech, nor by the other senses (*devas*), nor by austerity or works. The contemplator with a mind purified sees him by the calm light of knowledge."†

(4) Many of our readers must be aware that each *mantra* or verse of the Vedas has its *devata*. The European Sanskritists understand by it the god invoked in that verse. And as different *mantra* have different *devatas* it is, of course, supposed that the Vedic *rishis* invoked and worshipped many gods. This however, is a great mistake. Yaska says :—

अथातो दैवतं तद्यानि नामानि प्राधान्यस्तुतीनां देवतानां तद्दैवतमित्याचक्षते । सैषा देवतोपपरीक्षा यत्काम ऋषिर्यस्यां देवतायामर्थपत्यमिच्छन् स्तुतिं प्रयुङ्क्ते तद्दैवतः स मंत्रो भवति ॥ निरुक्त ७ । १‡

The purport of the above is that the *devata* of a *mantra* means the thing which forms the subjects of exposition in the *mantra*. In his "India, and what can it teach us ?" from which we have already quoted, Prof. Max Muller admits this. Says he :—

"If we call them (the things described in the Vedic verses) gods or goddesses, we must remember the remark of an ancient native theologian, (meaning

* Yajur Veda xl, 4.

† Mundaka Upanishad, ii, 8.

‡ Nirukta, vii, 1.

Yaska evidently) that by *devata* or *deity* he means no more than the object celebrated in a hymn."*

(5) The word *deva* is also used for God, who is the *illuminator* of all things, the source of all light and knowledge, and the giver of all that we enjoy in this world. But it does not *always* mean God. Indeed, as Prof. Max Muller admits, the word is not a substantive but an adjective, and as such is applicable to whatever possesses the attributes which the word connotes (*viz.*, brightness, conferring advantages, illuminating or throwing light on a thing, etc.)

Now the reader will be able to see that if the ancient Aryas called the sun and the moon, the sky and the sea, the earth and heavens *devatas*, it is not to be inferred that they believed them to be "gods" or worshipped them as such. All these and many other substances, as well as God, are denoted by the term *devata*; but of these *God alone is to be worshipped.* The Yajur Veda clearly says :—

वेदाहमेतं पुरुषं महान्तमादित्यवर्णं तमसः परस्तात्। तमेव विदित्वाति मृत्युमेति नान्यः पन्था विद्यतेऽयनाय॥ यजुः० ३१। १८

"May I know that Supreme Spirit, who is all and beyond darkness! By knowing Him alone can one overcome the great death; there is no other path for salvation."†

In Shatapatha Brahmana we are told in clear and forcible terms :—

योऽन्यां देवतामुपासते न स वेद यथा पशुरेव सदेवानाम्।
शतपथ कां० १४ अ० ४

"Who worships any other *devata*, he knows not. He is like unto a brute among the learned."‡

---

* *India : what can it teach us?* p. 147.

† Yajur Veda, xxxi, 18.

‡ Shatapatha. xii, 4.

We shall quote a hymn from the Rig Veda which will show what a clear and consistent, pure and perfect monotheism is taught in the Vedas :—

हिरण्यगर्भः समवर्त्तताग्रे भूतस्य जातः पतिरेक आसीत् ।
स दाधार पृथ्वीं द्यामुतेमां कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ १ ॥
य आत्मदा बलदा यस्य विश्व उपासते प्रशिषं यस्य देवाः ।
यस्यच्छायामृतं यस्य मृत्युः कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ २ ॥
यः प्राणतो निमिषतो महित्वैकइद्राजाजगतो बभूव ।
य ईशे अस्य द्विपदश्चतुष्पदः कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ३ ॥
यस्येमे हिमवन्तो महित्वा यस्य समुद्रं रसया सहाहुः ।
यस्येमाः प्रदिशो यस्य बाहू कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ४ ॥
येन द्यौरुग्रा पृथ्वी च दृढा येन स्वःस्तभितं येन नाकः ।
योऽन्तरिक्षे रजसो विमानः कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ५ ॥
यं क्रन्दसी अवसातस्तभाने अभ्यैक्षेतां मनसारेजमाने ।
यत्राधिसूर उदितो विभाति कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ६ ॥
आपोह यद् बृहतीर्विश्वमायन् गर्भं दधानाः जनयन्तीरग्निम् ।
ततो देवानां समवर्त्ततासुरेकः कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ७ ॥
यश्चिदापो महिनापर्यपश्यद् दक्षं दधानाः जनयन्तीर्यज्ञम् ।
यो देवानामधिदेव एक आसीत् कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥८॥
मानो हिंसीज्जनिता यः पृथिव्या यो वा दिवं सत्यधर्माजजान ।
यश्चापश्चन्द्रा बृहतीर्जजान कस्मैदेवाय हविषा विधेम ॥ ९ ॥
प्रजापते न त्वदेतान्यन्यो विश्वाजातानि परिता बभूव ।
यत्कामास्ते जुहुमस्तन्नो अस्तु वयं स्याम पतयोरयीणाम् ॥१०॥
ऋग्वेद मं० १० सू० १२ मं० १-१० ॥

"In the beginning there existed God, the source light. He was the *one* lord of all created beings. He upholds this earth and the heavens. He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"He, who is the giver of spiritual knowledge and giver of strength, Whom the world worships; Whose command all learned men obey; Whose

shelter is immortality; Whose shadow is death; He it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"He, Who by His greatness is the *one* sole king of this animate and inanimate world, Who is the creator and lord of all bipeds and puadrupeds; He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"Whose greatness these snowy mountains and the ocean with its waters proclaim; Whose arms are these vast regions; He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"By Whom the heavenly bodies are uplifted and the earth is made stable; by Whom the firmament and heaven are established; Who pervades the entire space by His spiritual essence; He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"To Whom the earth and heavens look up, being upheld by His protection, and moved by His will; in Whom the sun rises and shines forth: He it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"When this vast diffused matter producing an igneous condition, and holding in its womb this universe, manifested itself, then, He was the *one* life of all shining beings; He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"He, Who with His greatness looked on that diffused* matter possessed of heat and energy and

* The reference in this verse and the previous one, is to the ...lous state of the universe. We shall refer to the subject later on. ...§ 7 on "Cosmogony" in this chapter). आप is derived from the root ...' to pervade,' 'to be diffused;' We have, therefore, taken it to ...n 'diffused matter.' That this, and not 'water' is meant here, will be ... from the adjectival clauses दक्षं दधानाः 'possessed of heat or energy' ...न्तीर्यज्ञम् 'producing cosmos' in this mantra, and गर्भं दधानाः 'holding the ...a (of the universe) in its womb' and जनयन्तीरग्निम् 'producing fire or ...ous condition' in the foregoing verse.

producing the cosmos; Who is the *one* supreme lord (*adhideva*) of all bright things (*devas*); He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

"May the lord of truth and righteousness, creator of the earth, who has also created the heavens, and who manifested the vast and shining diffused matter; may he not inflict pain upon us; He, it is to Whom we shall offer our prayers."

" O lord of all creatures, no other than Thee can control and govern all these created things. May the things desiring which we pray to Thee, be ours ! May we be lords of good things of the world."*

No less than four times in this hymn of ten verses has the word " one" एक been used. The reader will search in vain for a more clear and unambiguous, beautiful and spirited description of the unity of God in the scriptures of any other religion.

When confronted with one or two isolated passages of the Vedas or Upanishads asserting the unity of Divine being, western scholars are sometimes apt to exclaim that they teach monism rather than monotheism ; that their sense† is that God is one, and there is no second *thing*,—and not that there is no second *God* ; that in short the tenor of such passages is *pantheistic*, and not *monotheistic*. We regret we can not make a further digression from the main subject

* Rig Veda x. 121, 1-10.

† For example, says Mr. J. Murdoch in his *Vedic Hinduism*, (Religious Reform Series, Part III):—

" Pantheism and polytheism are often combined, but monotheism in the strict sense of the word, is not found in Hinduism..... The Chhandogya formula, *Ekamevadvitiyam Brahma* एकमेवाद्वि one God without a second) was also adopted by Keshava Chandr But it does not mean that there is no second God, but that there second anything—a totally different doctrine."

treatise. We leave the reader to judge whether the above hymn, in which God is declared to be the creator and the sustainer of the universe, the one sole king of the world, the ordainar of heaven, and giver of immortality, to Whom prayers are to be offered, can with any show of reason be taken to teach monism or pantheism. We shall quote a few more verses from the Atharva Veda with Prof. Max Muller's translation:—

बृहन्नेषामधिष्ठाता अन्तिकादिव पश्यति ।
यस्तायन् मन्यते चरन् सर्वं देवा इदं विदुः ॥ १ ॥
यस्तिष्ठति चरति यश्च वञ्चति योनिलायं चरति यः प्रतङ्कम् ।
द्वौ संनिषद्य यन्मन्त्रयेते राजा तद्वेद वरुणस्तृतीयः ॥ २ ॥
उतेयं भूमिर्वरुणस्य राज्ञ उतासौ द्यौर्बृहती दूरे अन्ता ।
उतो समुद्रो वरुणस्य कुक्षी उतास्मिन्नल्प उदके निलीनः ॥ ३ ॥
उत यो द्यामतिसर्पात परस्तान्न समुच्यातै वरुणस्य राज्ञः ।
दिवस्पशः प्रचरन्ति दभस्य सहस्राक्षा अतिपश्यन्ति भूमिम् ॥४॥
सर्वं तद्राजा वरुणो विचष्टे यदन्तरा रोदसी यत् परस्तात् ।
संख्याता अस्य निमिषो जनानामक्षानिवश्वञ्ची निमिनोति तानि ॥५॥
येते पाशा वरुण सप्त सप्त त्रेधा तिष्ठन्ति विषिताः रुशन्तः ।
छिनन्तु सर्वे अनृतं वदन्तः यः सत्यवाद्यति तं सृजन्तु ॥ ६ ॥

अथर्व कां० ४, सू० १६

"Varuna,* the great lord, sees, as if He were near. If a man stands, or walks, or hides, if he goes to lie down, or to get up; what two people sitting together whisper to each other, King Varuna knows it He is there as the third."

"This earth, too, belongs to Varuna the king, and this wide sky with its ends far apart. The two seas (the sky and the ocean) are Varuna's loins. He is also contained in this small drop of water."

* One of the names of the Deity meaning *God the greatest and the best.*

"He, who should flee far beyond the sky, even he would not be rid of Varuna, the king. His spies proceed from heaven towards the world: with thousand eyes they overlook this earth."

"King Varuna sees all this, what is between heaven and earth, and what is beyond. He has counted the twinklings of the eyes of men. As a player throws down the dice, He settles all things (irrevocably)."

"May all thy fatal snares that stand spread out seven and threefold, catch the man who tells a lie; may they pass by him who speaks the truth."*

It is thus clear that the Vedas teach a pure and perfect monotheism, as different from pantheism, as it is from the anthropomorphism of some other theistic religions, chiefly the Semitic religions. And we shall here see that the Vedic notion of God has deteriorated rather than improved in its passage from one religion to another. As taught in the Vedas, it is the most sublime and perfect which it is possible for the human mind to conceive or comprehend. In the Zend Avesta it becomes slightly tinged with anthropomorphism (*e.g.*, we see Ahura Mazda speaking to, and holding conferences with Zarathushtra).† In the Bible and the Koran it becomes thoroughly anthropomorphic, the Deity being, represented very much like a despotic king subject to all the passions and emotions, limitations and imperfections of a human being. In the Bible we find him "walking ‡ in the garden [of Aden] in the

* *Atharva Veda*, iv. 4, 16, 1-6. Translated by Prof. Max Muller in his "*India, what can it teach us*", p. 200.

† *E.g.*, see *Yasna* xii.

‡ *Genesis* iv. 8, 9, 14-19.

cool of the the day," " calling unto Adam " who " hears " His voice, and then chiding and cursing Adam and Eve for their disobedience. We find him "repenting"* that He made man on the earth, and "it grieves Him at His heart." He resolutely says: "I will destroy.....both man and beast, and the creeping things, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth Me that I have made them;" and He sends down a great flood upon his helpless creatures. But as it were, with a sort of forethought, lest He should again have to repent for having destroyed them all, He spares Noah and his family, and also allows *him to take in his Ark a pair of every animal.*† He "smells a sweet savour" when, after the flood is over, Noah " offers burnt offerings," and now being in a calmer mood, with evident remorse for what He had done, He says, " I will not curse the ground any more for man's sake, for the imagination of man's heart is evil from youth, [as if He did not know this before !]; neither will I again smite, any more, everything living, as I have done."‡

Such is the picture of God depicted in the Bible, and the Koran only carries still further the progress of deterioration begun in the Bible. There the Deity is pictured like a veritable Oriental despot and that too, of not very benign disposition. He sits on a throne § supported by eight angels in the highest heaven. He curses the infidels, || makes wars with them, and encourages His followers to do the same.¶ He swears hard,

* *Genesis* vi, 6-7.
† *Ibid*, vi 13-22.
‡ *Ibid*, viii. 21.
§ Sale's *Koran*, Chap. Ixix, p. 422.
|| *Ibid*, Chapter ii, p. 11.
¶ *Ibid*, Chapter xlvii, p. 375.

as few men with a sense of their dignity would like to do.* He is not above calling Himself "layer of plots."† As to His ominpotence, so to his supreme but arbitrary will, there are no limits whatever. "God will," says the Koran, "lead into error whom he pleaseth, and whom he pleaseth he will put him in the right way."‡

Another defect from which Vedic theism is perfectly free, and which seriously mars the monotheism of the Zend Avesta, the Bible, and the Koran, has already been noticed in the last chapter, *viz.*, the doctrine of the personality of Satan. In Chapter IV, section 4, we have shown how this doctrine is based on a misconception of the Vedic allegory describing the war in nature between light and darkness, or good and evil. In the Zend Avesta, the personification of the devil is only half complete. He is called therein by such names as, *akammano-* "evil mind," *angra minyu*, "a fiery or hurtful mind," *azhi dahak*, "the burning serpent." But in the Bible and the Koran his personality is as real as that of God Himself. He even assumes a physical appearance, and in the form of a serpent § deceives the first parents of the human race into disobeying God, and thus introduces sin into the world, with the result that Adam and Eve are banished from paradise‖ which God had destined for them. He even tempts Christ,¶ the son and incarnation of God Himself.

* Sale's *Koran*, Chapter xxxvii, p. 334; ii, p. 387: lxxix, p. 436; xci, p. 447.
† *Ibid*, Chapter viii, p. 129.
‡ *Ibid*, Chapter vi, p. 92.
§ *Genesis* Chapter iii, 1.
‖ *Ibid*, Chapter iii, 23-24.
¶ *Mathew*, Chapter iv, 1-11.

We see then that the Vedic monotheism has rather than gained, in purity and sublimity in being transmitted into the channels of the Zend Avesta, the Bible, and the Koran. And what has been said here about the conception of God holds equally true of the other important doctrines of religion. For the idea of God is the basic principle of all the four great religions of which we are here speaking. The stream of *Religion* is purest at its fountain-head where it springs from the snows of superfine whiteness that fall from heaven. It gradually loses its supernal and pristine purity as it descends into the valleys and flows through the plains, receiving the waters that are washed down by the coasts. Even its more or less turbid water will cool the parched lips of a thirsty man who is infinitely better for it than he would be without any water at all. But can it compare with the pure and crystalline water that oozes from the perpetual snows with no *earthy* mixture in it? May we then approach the spring-head, and there drink deep of its *heaven-sent* waters for satisfying our spiritual thirst! Amen!

The above will give the reader some idea as to the teaching of the Vedas about God. In Chap. IV we have shown what the Zoroastrian conception of God is. The reader will easily see that (barring the two defects mentioned above) the conception of Ahura Mazda coincides with that of the Vedic God. Not only are the two conceptions the same, but many of the words that are used for God in the Vedas occur also in the Zend Avesta. Such is the very expression *Ahura Mazda* which is most frequently used in the Zend Avesta as a name of the Deity, and which

corresponds to *Asura Medha** of the Vedas. Such are also the words :—

S. Aryaman अर्य्यमन्=Z. Airyaman.
S. Mitra मित्र=Z. Mithra.
S. Narashansa नराशंस=Z. Naryosanha.
S. Vrittrahan वृत्रहन्=Z. Vrittraghna.
S. Bhaga भग=Z. Bagha.

What is more remarkable is this that most of these words are used in the same double sense in the *Zend Avesta* in which they are used in the Vedas. We will quote Dr. Haug about the word *Aryaman* :—

" Aryaman has in both scriptures a double meaning (*a*) "a friend, associate,".....(*b*) "the name of a Deity or spirit, (God or Supreme spirit, we should say), who seems particularly to preside over marriages, on which occasions he is invoked both by Brahmans and Parsis."†

" *Mithra* in Zend is used in all the three senses in which the word *Mitra* is used in the Vedas, *viz* :— (1) friend, (2) the sun, (3) God. The corresponding Persian word *Mihir* is still used in the first two senses

Bhaga (*Z. Bagha*) is used in the two meanings of (1) God and (2) destiny ; *Vrittrahan* in the double sense of (1) God as the destroyer of evil and (2) the sun as the disperser of darkness.

About Narashansa, Dr. Haug says .—" Narashansa (see Yaska's Nirukta VIII, 6).....is identical with Nairyo Sanha (Niryo Sangha) the name of an angel in the *Zend Avesta*, who serves Ahura Mazda as a *messenger* (see Vendidad XXII), in which capacity

* *Vide* foot-note on the word *Asura* in § 1 of this Chapter.

†Haug's *Essays*, p. 273. (The paranthesis is our own).

we find Agni and Pushan in the Vedic hymns also. The word means, 'one praised by men,' *i. e.*, 'renowned.'" Narashansa is used in the double sense of (1) God and (2) fire. It is in the latter sense that Narashansa or Niryosanha is called a devine *messenger* or "Duta;"* for, it is by the agency of fire or (more accurately speaking) *heat*, that watery vapours and juices of things are *conveyed* from one place to another. Fire or heat may, therefore, well be called the messenger of nature or of nature's God.

Section 6.—Thirty-three Devas.

Some of our readers must have heard of the "Thirty-three Devas" of the Vedas.† When the Vedic religion degenerated into polytheism in India it is these which perhaps became multiplied into the 33 *crores* (*i.e.*, 330 millions) gods of the Hindu pantheon! But what were the thirty-three Devas of the Vedas? Were they thirty-three gods? Certainly not Pandit Guru Datta's exposition of the subject in his *Terminology of the Vedas* is so clear and beautiful, that we shall make no apology for quoting *in extenso* here:—

"We have seen that Yaska regards the names of those substances whose properties are treated of in the Mantra as the *devatas*, What substances then are the *devatas*? They are all that can form the subject of human knowledge. All human knowledge is limited by two conditions, *i.e.*, *time* and *space*. Our know-

Cf. Yajur Veda, xxiii, 17, in which Agni, *i.e.*, fire or heat, is called a Dutta or messenger.

अग्निं दूतं पुरोदधे हव्यवाहमुपब्रुवे। देवान् आसादयादिह॥
यजु० २३। १६

† *E.g.*, *see Yajur Veda*, xiv, 31; *Atharva Veda*, x, 4, 27.

ledge of causation is mainly that of succession of events. And succession is nothing but an *order in time*. Again, our knowledge must be a knowledge of something, and that something must be somewhere. It must have a *locality* for its existence and occurrence. Thus far the *circumstances* of our knowledge are *time* and *locality*. Now to the essentials of knowledge. The most exhaustive division of human knowledge is between *objective* and *subjective*. Objective knowledge is the knowledge of all that passes without the human body. It is the knowledge of the phenomena of the external universe. Scientific men have arrived at the conclusion that natural philosophy, *i.e.*, philosohy of the material universe, reveals the presence of two things—matter and force. Matter as matter is not known to us. It is only the play of force in matter producing effects sensible that is known to us. Hence the knowledge of external world is resolved into the knowledge of *force* with its modifications. We come next to subjective knowledge. In speaking of subjective knowledge, there is firstly, the ago, the *human spirit*, the conscious entity; secondly, the internal phenomena of which the human spirit is conscious. The internal phenomena are of two kinds. They are either voluntary, intelligent, self-conscious activities of the mind, which may hence be designated *deliberate action* or the passive modifications effected in the functions of the body by the presence of human spirit. These may, therefore, be called the *vital activities*."

"An *a priori* analysis, therefore, of the knowable leads us to six things, *time*, *locality force*, *human spirit*, *deliberate activities* and *vital activities*. These

things then are fit to he called *devatas*. The conclusion to be derived from the above enumeration is, that if the account of *Nirukta* concerning Vedic *devatas* as we have given, be really true, we should find Vedas inculcating these six things—*time locality, force, human spirit, deliberate activities* and *vital activities* as *devatas*, and no others. Let us apply the crucial test.'

We find, however, the mention of 33 *devatas* in such *mantras* as these :—

त्रयस्त्रिं शंतास्तुवतभूतान्यशाम्यन् प्रजापतिः परमेष्ठ्याधिपतिरासीत्। Yajur, XIV, 31.

यस्य त्रयस्त्रिंशद्देवा अङ्गे गात्रा बिभेजिरे।
तान्वै त्रयस्त्रिंशद्देवानेके ब्रह्मविदो विदुः॥ अथर्व॥

Atharva—X. 4, 27.

"The Lord of all, the Ruler of the universe; the sustainer of all, holds all things by 33 *devatas*."

"The knowers of true theology recognize the 33 *devatas* performing their proper organic functions, at existing in and by him, the one and only."

Let us, therefore, see what these 33 *devatas* are, so that we may be able to compare them with our *a priori* deductions and settle the question.

"We read in Shatapatha Brahman :—

सहोवाच महिमान एवैषामेते त्रयस्त्रिं शत्वेव देवाइति।
कतमेते त्रयस्त्रिं शदित्यष्टौ वसव एकादश रुद्रा द्वादशादित्यास्त एकत्रिंशदिन्द्रश्चैव प्रजापतिश्च त्रयस्त्रिं शाविति॥ ३॥
कतमेवसव इति। अग्निश्च पृथिवी च वायुश्चन्तरिक्षं चादित्यश्च द्यौश्च चन्द्रमाश्च नक्षत्राणि चैते वसव एतेषु हीदं सर्वं वसुहितमेते हीद थं सर्वं वासयन्ते तद्यदिदं सर्वं वासयन्ते तस्माद्वसव इति॥ ४॥
कतमे रुद्रा इति। दशेमे पुरुषे प्राणा आत्मैकादशस्ते यदास्मानमर्त्याच्छरीरादुत्क्रामन्त्यथ रोदयन्ति तद्यद्रोदयन्ति तस्माद्रुद्रा इति॥ ५॥
कतम आदित्या इति। द्वादश मासाः संवत्सरस्यैता आदित्या

एते हीदथं सर्वमाददानायन्ति तद्यदिदथं सर्वमाददानायन्ति तस्मादादित्या इति ॥ ६ ॥
कतम इन्द्रः कतमः प्रजापतिरिति । स्तनयित्नुरेवेन्द्रो यज्ञः प्रजापतिरिति । कतमः स्तनयित्नुरित्यशनिरिति ।
कतमो यज्ञ इति पशव इति ॥ ७ ॥
कतमेते त्रयो देवा इतीम एव त्रयो लोका एषु हीमे सर्वे देवा इति । कतमौ द्वौ देवावित्यन्नं चैव प्राणश्चेति । कतमो अध्यर्ध इतियोऽयं पवते ॥ ८ ॥
तदाहुः यदयमेक एव पवतेऽथ कथमध्यर्ध इति यदस्मिन्निदथं सर्वमध्याध्नोत्तेनाध्यर्ध इति । कतम एको देव इति स ब्रह्मत्यदित्याचक्षते ॥—Shatapatha, p. XIV, 16 (*vide* Swami-Dayananda Saraswati's Veda Bhumika, p. 66.)

The meaning of the above is :—"Says Yajnavalkya to Shakalya : there are 33 *devatas* which manifest the glory of God : 8 *Vasus*, 11 *Rudras* 12 *Adityas*, *Isdra* and *Prajapati*; 33 on the whole. The eight *Vasus* are (1) heated cosmic bodies, (2) planets, (3) atmospheres. (4) superterrestrial space, (5) suns, (6) rays of ethereal space, (7) satellites. (8) stars. These are called *Vasus* (abodes), for the whole group of existences reside in them, for they are an abode of all that lives, moves, or exists. The eleven *Rudras* are the ten *pranas* (nervauric forces) enlivening the human frame, and the eleventh is *atma* (the human spirit). These are called the *Rudras* (from root *rud*, to weep), because when they desert the body, it becomes dead, and the relations of the dead in consequence of this desertion, begin to weep. The twelve *Adityas* are the twelve solar months, marking the course of time. They are called *Adityas* as by their cyclic motion they produce changes in all objects and hence *the lapse of the term of existence for each object.*

Aditya means that which causes such a lapse. *Indra* is the all-pervading *electricity* or *force*. *Prajapati* is *yajna* (or an active voluntary association of objects on the part of man for the purposes or art, or association with other men for purposes of teaching or learning). It also means *pashus* (the useful animals) *Yajna* and useful animals are called *Prajapatis* as it is by such actions and by such animals that the world at large derives its materials of sustenance. 'What then, are the three *devatas*?'—asks Shakalya, "They are," replies Yajnavalkya, "the three lokas (*viz.*, *locality name* and *birth*." 'What are the two *devatas*,' asked he? Yajnavalkya replied, "*pranas* (the positive substances) and *nana* (the negative substances)." 'What is the *Adhyardha*,' he asks. Yajnavalkya replies: "Adhyardha is the universal electricity, the sustaine of the universe, know as *Sutratma*." Lastly, he enquired, 'who is the one *devata*?' Yajnavalkya replied, "God, the adorable."

"These then are the thirty-three *devatas* mentioned in the Vedas. Let us see how far this analysis agrees with our *a priori* deduction. The eight *Vasus* enumerated in Shatapatha are clearly the *localities*; the eleven *Rudras* include firstly the *ego* the *human spirit*, and secondly the ten *nervauric* forces which may be approximately taken for the *vital activities* of the mind; the twelve *Adityas* comprise *time*; *electricity* is the all-pervading *force*; whereas, *Prajapati* (*yajna* or *pashus*) may be roughly regarded as comprising the objects of intelligent *deliberate activities* of the mind."

"When thus understood, the 33 *devatas* will correspond with the six elements of our rough analysis. Since the object here is not so much as to show exactness of detail as general coincidence, partial differences may be left out of account."*

"With these thirty-three devas of the Vedas," says Dr. Haug, "we may compare these thirty-three *Ratus*" mentioned in the Zend Avesta (Yas. I, 10), Dr. Haug elsewhere observes:—"A very remarkable coincidence as to the number of divine † beings .... is to be found between the statements of the Vedas and Zend Avesta."‡

It does not appear from the Zend Avesta, however, that the Parsis understood the true import of the 33 Ratus. Dr. Haug admits this. Says he:—"From their not being expressly enumerated according to their several classes, [*viz.*, Vasus, Rudras, Adityas, etc.,] § as the thirty-three Devas of the Vedas, we may gather with some certainty that the "thirty-three Ratus" was only a time-hallowed formula for enumerating the divine existences, the bearing and import of which was no longer understood by the Iranians after their separation from the Brahmans."‖

Section 7.—Cosmogony, or Eternity of Matter and Soul, and Cycles of Cosmic Evolutions.

How this universe came into being is a riddle of which every religion must attempt a solution. Buddhism which does not believe in a God or Creator, cuts the Gordian knot by simply denying that this world has ever had a beginning, or will have an end.

*Pandit Guru Datta's *Terminology of the Vedas, and European Scholars.*

†This is only an instance of that habit of mistranslating the word "devas" by "Gods" or "divine beings" about which we have spoken at great length in section 5.

‡ Haug's *Essays*, p. 276.

§ The parenthesis is our own.

‖ Haug's *Essays*, p. 276.

According to it the universe has existed, just as it is, from all times, and will so continue to exist for all eternity. This view is, however, quite erroneous. Scientists tell us that there was a time when the earth was, on account of extreme heat, in a molten state; and they point out that though the outer crust of our globe has cooled and become solid, there is still great heat in its interior, as is evidenced by the fact that the substances emitted from the bowels of the earth during volcanic eruptions are generally in a state of fusion. We are also told that prior to this molten condition, the earth was a globe of fire like the sun, and prior still it was in a gaseous (or nebulous) state. Of course, no animals could live, nor any vegetables grow on the earth when it was hot.

The various stages through which the earth has passed in its evolution, and which western science has discovered only recently, are mentioned in the oldest books of the Vedic literature. Modern science stops at the gaseous or nebulous state, but our *Shastras* go back one step further, and describe a fifth stage called ethereal or *Akasha*, which is subtler than the aerial or gaseous state, and is thus the first state of planetary evolution. In Taittiriya Upanishad we read:—

तस्माद्वा एतस्मादात्मन आकाशः सम्भूतः । आकाशाद्वायुः । वायोरग्निः । अग्नेरापः । अद्भ्यः पृथिवी । पृथिव्या ओषधयः । ओषधिभ्योऽन्नम् । अन्नाद्रेतः । रेतसः पुरुषः । तै० उपनि० ब्रह्मानन्दवल्ली अनुवाक २ ।

"When the Supreme Spirit began to evolve cosmos, He first produced ether : from ether came out the gaseous condition ; from the gaseous, the igneous condition ; from the igneous, the aqueous (*i. e.*, liquid or

molten) condition; from the aqueous or molten came out the solid state. From the solid earth were produced the herbs; from herbs, the food (or other vegetables); from the food was produced the seed of animal life, and thence man."*

Again, science tells us that the sun is daily losing its heat, and will ultimately become as cold one day as our own planet, the earth, or the moon. It is clear that the earth will then have ceased to be a fit abode for man or other animals; nor will any vegetables grow upon it. The same will be the case with other planets of our solar system.

It is thus established by the researches of physical science that there was a time when the infinite variety of animals and vegetables which we find now inhabiting or growing upon the earth, did not exist, and that there will come a time, when all these forms of life will again be swept away from the surface of the earth. The same is true of every planet revolving round the sun, and of all other planets too. The Buddhist theory, therefore, falls to the ground, and the question remains, who brought about all this change, or is bringing it about? Who guides the earth, and indeed each of the unnumbered globes in this limitless space through the successive stages of its evolution from a mass of nebula, ultimately to a solid state with countless species of animals living upon it, and through its stages of *involution* (as we may term it) back into a chaotic state? We answer, God.

The Vedic doctrine is that nothing can be produced out of nothing, and that no real existing thing

* Taittiriya Upanishad, Brahmanend Balli, Anuvaka II.

can be completely annihilated. This truth is very clearly expressed in the following verse of *Bhagvad Gita*:—

नासतो विद्यते भावो नाभावो विद्यते सतः ।
उभयोरपिदृष्टोऽन्तस्त्वनयोस्तत्त्वदर्शिभिः॥ गीता अ०२श्लो१६

"There can be no existence of that which is non-existent, nor can an existing thing cease to exist. The truth of both of these statements has been seen, (or realised) by philosophers."* The *Sankhya Sutras* also say नावस्तुनो वस्तुसिद्धिः "no real thing can come out of what is non-existent, or *ex-nihilo nihil fit*."† Matter and soul are simple and elementary substances, and not made up of any simpler thing or things. They could not have been created out of nothing. They are therefore eternal substance existing from all eternity, and incapable of total destruction.‡

The Vedic philosophy thus affirms the existence of three eternal entities, *viz.*, God, matter and soul. The doctrine is beautifully explained in the Rig Veda:—

द्वा सुपर्णा सयुजा सखाया समानं वृक्षं परिषस्वजाते ।
तयोरन्यः पिप्पलं स्वाद्वत्त्यनश्नन्यो अभिचाकशीति ॥
ऋ० मं० १ सू० १६४ मं० २० ।

"Two co-eternal spirits reside in the equally eternal matter like two co-eval and friendly birds perching on the same tree. One of these two (*viz.*,

* Bhagvad Gita, II, 16.

† *Sankhya Sutra*, I, 78.

‡ The common ojection that this doctrine places a limit on the omnipotence of God, is weak and invalid. One may as well urge that God is not all-powerful, because He cannot make two and two five, or because He cannot make a round square, as that he is not all-powerful for being unable to create something out of nothing. Omnipotence does not mean the ablity to do what is impossible from the very nature of the case.

the *finite soul*) tastes of the fruit of this tree (*i.e.*, feels pleasure and pain which are incidental to the soul's union with matter, or its circumscription with a body); while the other (*viz.*, *Infinite soul* or God) simply watches or supervises without being subject to its joys and sorrows)."*

The objection which is sometimes raised against this doctrine that it amounts to a belief in three, or a plurality of Gods, is too absurd to demand a serious refutation. Though all three substances possess this common attribute of being 'eternal,' there is no other attribute which is common to all of them. Matter is of course, dead and inert, while God and souls are intelligent beings. Of God and souls too, the former is infinite, the latter finite; the former fills all space and pervades all things, the latter is circumscribed in a small body; the former is free from the pleasures and pains to which the latter is subject; the former is omniscient, the latter has only a limited knowledge and so on. Can it be reasonably urged that this amounts to a belief in the divinity of matter and soul? Is *divinity* equivalent to *eternity*? Is *eternity* the *only* attribute connoted by the term 'God'?

God is the *efficient* cause of this universe; matter is its material cause. They are both eternal, as are also the souls. But this particular cosmos in which we are living is not eternal (as Buddhists would have it.) It has had a beginning, and it will have an end. The period during which a particular cosmos lasts is called a *kalpa* (literally cosmos, or figuratively a *Brahma dina*, *i.e.*, a *divine day*, and it consists of

* Rig Veda, I, 364, 20.

4,32,00,00,000, ordinary years.* It is preceded and succeeded by an equal period during which matter lies in a state of chaos, ahd that is called a *Bahma Ratri*, *i.e.*, a "divine night." The evolution of a cosmos from chaos may be called a creation (*srishti* सृष्टि) and its involution (*Pralaya* प्रलय). Creation *exnihilo* and complete annihilation are impossibilities. Before the evolution of this particular cosmos commenced, matter lay in a chaotic state ; before that chaos there was a cosmos ; before that cosmos anther chaos ; before that chaos another cosmos ; and so on without beginning. Similarly the present universe will be succeeded by as choas after which there will be another cosmos, and so forth without end. As days and nights succeed each other, so do cosmos and chaos in this eternal cycle fo evolutions and involutions.

The reader need hardly be told that this doctrine of an co-eternity of matter and souls with God, and of an eternal cycle of creations and dissolutions, (better termed evolutions and involutions), is peculiar to Aryan philosophy. The Semitic religions teach a totally different hypothesis. According to them this universe is the first and the last of its kind. It was created out of nothing at a particular time, and it will again go into nothing, when the time comes for it. Aut the souls will survive the general destruction, some of them being sent to heaven and others consigned to hell for all eternity according to their deserts.

Apart form the unscientific character of the hypothesis that some thing can come out of nothing

* *See* Atharva Veda, VIII, I, ii, 21 and Manu I, 69-72. Also see Swami Dayananda Saraswati's Rig Vedadi Bhashya Bhumika, pp. 21-26 an this subject.

and be again reduced to nothing, the supporters of this theory have to be confronted with many a knotty question :—Why did God create this universe out of nothing at a particular time, and why will he again annihilate it at another fixed time ? What impelled Him to make this change in His otherwise quiet existence ? Why did He not desire to create it before the particular time when it was created ? All that our friends who support the above hypothesis can say in answer to these and similar other questions is that they are " mysteries," a word which helps to cover so many weaknesses in a system of religion ! From the standpoint of Vedic philosophy these questions do not and cannot arise. For there was never a time when God for the first time created this world. Again it is also worth while to remark that according to the Semitic theory, it will be difficult to predicate of God before He created this universe or after He will have destroyed it, those attributes which we commonly affirm of Him. How could He be called a creator for He had created nothing before this universe, and how could He be said to be omniscient forthere existed nothing which He could possibly know ? How could He be said to be just for there were no beings between whom he could a judge and be just? How could He be merciful for there were none on whom He could show mercy ? And yet it cannot be ignored that the period for which this world has lasted or shall last, is insignificant we may say, is almost nothing, by the side of eternity. A drop bears some proportion to the ocean of which it is a part, but a terminable period however long it may be, can bear no proportion whatever to eternity. God's nature cannot be said to be

uniform according to this theory. Further, is it not unphilosophical to believe that souls which have had a beginning will yet have no end?

But we digress. Our object here is not so much to show the superiority of the Vedic doctrine over other religions as to trace a connection between it and the Zoroastrian teachings. Now it can be shown that the Parsi scriptures contain the doctrine explained above. In Sasan I, we read:—"Souls are immaterial, indivisible, without beginning and without end."*

In his commentary of the above Sasan V., the last inspired writer of the Parsi religion, first proves that souls are immaterial and indivisible, and then proceeds:—

"After this I say that souls are *eternal* because for every created substance there must be a material before it [was created]. Thus if the souls are not eternal they must be material which has been already disproved." The same argument has been employed to prove the eternity of matter.

The doctrine of successive creations and dissolutions is also explicitly enunciated. Each cosmos (with its succeeding chaos) is called in the Parsi scriptures a "mih charkha" which corresponds to Sanskrit *maha chakra* and means a "great round or cycle." We find in Sasan I:

"In the beginning of a *mih charkha* the work of evolution of the universe commences anew. The forms, actions, and knowledge manifested in that *mih charkha* are similar to those in the previous *mih*

* Sasan I, 18. *Dalayul-ul-Mashain* or an Urdû Translation of the inspired Letters or Writiugs of Sasan I, with the commentary of Sasan V, by M. Debi Prashad of Badaun.

charkha. Every *mih charkha* that comes is similar to the previous one from beginning to the end."*

Sasan V thus comments on the above:—

"In the beginning of a *mih charkha* the elements being to combine, and there are manifested forms which in speech and action are similar to those of the previous *mih charkha* ; but they are not the very same forms."

With this may be compared the following verse of the Rig Veda:—

ऋतञ्च सत्यञ्चाभीद्धात्तपसोऽध्यजायत ततो रात्र्यजायत ।
ततः समुद्रो अर्णवः । समुद्रादर्णवादधि संवत्सरो अजायत ।
अहोरात्राणि विदधद् विश्वस्य मिषतो वशी । सूर्य्याचन्द्रमसौ
धाता यथापूर्वमकल्पयत् । दिवञ्च पृथिवीञ्चान्तरिक्षमथो स्वः ।

ऋ० मं० १० । सू० । १९० । १

"[Before the commencement of the evolution of this cosmos] God with His wisdom and power first manifested the eternally existing matter. There was then (divine) night. Then God fixed the space (for each system in the would-be cosmos); after the fixing of space the yearly motion was produced. Then the eternal Controller of the universe produced the diurnal motion, causing days and nights. In this way that Upholder of the universe created the sun, the moon, and the earth, and other stars of the heavens with inter-stellar space, just as He had created them in the previous *kalpa* or cosmos."†

The doctrine about cosmogony is not treated of in the Parsi scriptures as elaborately as in the books of Vedic literature. Still the above quotations prove that the Parsi doctrine was derived from the Vedic

* Sasan I. 115, 116.

† Rig Veda, X, 190, 10.

one. In section 4 of the last chapter we have already shown that the order of the creation of various things, (*viz.*, heaven, earth, vegetables, animals and man) as described in Zend Avesta, is substantially the same as given in the Yajur Veda, and that the Mosaic account of cosmogony as given in Genesis, Chapter I, is only a copy of Zoroastrian account. But the Biblical writers borrowed only that much, and do not appear to have extended their thoughts beyond this particular cosmos to have ever troubled themselves with the problem as to whether there was any universe before the creation of this particular one, or there will be any after this one is destroyed. Nor do they appear to have ever asked themselves as to whether this universe was created from nothing or out of a previously existing material. For there is, in the Bible, no clear enunciation of the popularly received Semitic doctrine that the world was created out of nothing and for the first time. In fact, it is noteworthy that the Hebrew word "*bûrâ*" in the opening verse of the Genesis, which has been translated into "created," means, accurately speaking, "cut cut, out, planned,"—which would go to show that the author of the Genesis, perhaps believed in the pre-existence of matter. Later on, as the original Vedic teaching was more forgotten, it became an article of faith with all the three Semitic religions that this universe is the first and last of its kind, and that it was produced out of nothing, and will pass again into nothing. We have already indicated how unscientific and unphilosophical this hypothesis is.

It will be easily seen how the Buddhist theory is also connected will the Vedic doctrine. Buddhism

is right so far as it *affirms* the eternal continuity of the universe. But it is wrong in *denying* a beginning and an end for this *particul r* cosmos, in which we are living. The Semitic theory is just the converse of this. It is right when it *asserts* that this universe has a beginning and will have an end. But it is wrong when it *denies* that there had been any universe before this one was created, or will be any after this one is destroyed. In other words, both the theorise (Buddhist and Semitic) *are right in what they affirms, but wrong in what they deny.* Both are incomplete, the one erring in one direction, and the other stopping short in the contrary direction. Each is complementary to the other. The Vedic teaching is the central doctrine from which both emanate,—the whole of which they are isolated and incomplete parts.

Section 8.—Transmigration of Souls.

Whence have I come? Whither shall I go? These questions will at times be asked by everybody. They are *problems of life*, as the questions dealt with in the last section, are *problems of the universe*. Those relate chiefly to *matter*: these to the *soul*. The former are particulary allied to *physcal science*, as the latter are to *metaphysic*. But both fall within the wide domain of *religion*, and every system of religion should offer a solution of both sets of problems.

As in the case of problems about the universe, so in the present case, the answer of the Vedic religion will be found to be radically different from that of the Semitic religions. Indeed, the reply of each system to the questions now under consideration, is

a counterpart of the reply given by it to the questions concerning the universe.

We have seen that, according to the Vedic religion, the present universe is but one in an endless cycle of similar cosmic arrangements. In the same manner we hold that our present life is but one in a series of numberless incarnations though not all of the human form necessarilly. The soul being eternal like matter is, properly speaking, never born, and never dies.

Says Katha Upanished :—

न जायतेम्रियते वा विपश्चिन्नायं कुतश्चिन्न बभूव कश्चित्
अजो नित्यः शाश्वतोऽयं पुराणो न हन्यते हन्यमाने शरीरे ॥ कठ । अ० १ व० १८ ॥

" This intelligent soul is neither born, nor dies ; nor was it ever made out of anything, nor can anything be made out of it. It is uncreated, eternal, everlasting and does not perish at the dissolution of the body."*

The union of the soul with a particular body is what we call *birth*, and its separation therefrom is called *death*, On leaving one mortal coil, the soul transmigrates into another body, human, animal, or even vegetable, according to its deserts. We may again quote from Katha Upanishad :—

हन्त त इदं प्रवक्ष्यामि गुह्यं ब्रह्म सनातनम्।
यथा च मरणं प्राप्य आत्मा भवति गौतम ॥
योनिमन्ये प्रपद्यन्ते शरीरत्वाय देहिनः ।
स्थाणुमन्येऽनुसंयन्ति यथा कर्म यथा श्रुतम् ॥

कठवल्ली ५। ६-७

" Now I will tell thee, Gautama, the eternal and divine mystery as to how the soul fares after attaining

* Katha Upanishad, I. 2, 18.

death. Some souls attain to other bodies, while some fall to the vegetable state according to their actions and knowledge."*

This process of transmigration continues till the soul being purged of all its sins, and having acquired a true and full knowledge of God by *Yoga*, attains to *Mukti*, or emancipation, and enjoys perfect bliss by its union with God.

According to the Semitic theory, as already noticed, this world is the first and last of its kind. Similarly it is held that our present life is the only one of its kind. The soul takes its birth along with its physical tenement, and though it does not die with the body, it will assume no more physical forms, but will remain awaiting its fate till the day of resurrection, when God will pronounce judgment on each soul, sending some to eternal heaven, and consigning others to the everlastiug fires of hell.

As in the case of problems of the universe, so here the advocates of this theory have a number of puzzling questions to answrer :—"Why did God create the soul out of nothing, making some happy and others miserable. Assuming that he did create them, why did he endow some only and not others with good physique, and mental and moral equipment? Why did he place some in favourable and others in unfavourable environments? The unequal distribution of happiness and misery, and of intellectual and moral capacities, is a fact too patent to be gainsaid, and too clear to be explained away by any amount of sophistry. Would it not prove God to be

* Katha Upanished, V. 6-7.

unjust if the soul had no previous merits and demerits to be rewarded or punished for? When pressed hard with questions like these our friends are apt to seek refuge in the word "mystery."—a convenient loophole for escaping from awkward and untenable positions.

The theory begins with injustice, and it also ends with injusfice. For however wicked a man's whole life may be, he cannot justly deserve *eternal* sufferings of hell. Justice, even if it be not tempered with mercy, demands that punishment should be proportionate to the guilt. But what proportion can there possibly be between a life of wickedness, say of hundred years, and the tortures of hellish fires lasting for all eternity? The very idea of eternal punishment is extremely horrible and repugnant, and no wonder if the minds of even many thoughtful Christians have rebelled against it. Some eminent thinkers, (*e.g.*, Locke*) have sought refuge in the answer that only the virtuous souls live an eternal life, while the wicked ones perish, *i.e.*, cease to exist. Fair solution this! For it is as impossible for a soul to cease to exist altogether, as to be produced out of nothing. According to this answer not only the doctrine of hell, but that of the immortality of the soul, becomes a pure figment.

Again, is it fair that the soul should be given but one chance or trial, in a matter wherein its whole futurity, nay eternity, is at stake? There is no denying the fact that life is a severe moral trial. Temptations of all sorts cross our path at each step, and

* *Vide* Lock's *Treatise on the Reasonableness of Christianity*, and [illegible] *Life of Locke* by Thomas Fowler, pp. 155-157, English Men of [illegible] Series.

many men fall an easy prey to them. So much is this the case, that Christians find it necessary to believe in the doctrines of *original taint* and a *personal Devil* to account for the existence of so much sin in the world. Yet the soul has to be given only one trial, and no more. If it comes out of the ordeal successfully, well and good. But woe to it, if it fails, for then it is damned and damned for ever, with no further hope of salvation! Reader, compare with this, the Vedic doctrine of re-births, according to which, the soul that has strayed, reaps the harvest of misdeeds for a limited period in the bodies of lower animals, and after it has been purged of its sins, is again born as a rational being, and is thus given a fesh chance for working out its emancipation with freedom of will to choose the right path or the wrong one, and with knowledge to distinguish the one from the other.

We may also observe that the ends of justice cannot possibly be satisfied by roughly dividing all souls nto two classes" good" and " wicked," sending the one o heaven, and throwing the other into the fires of hell. Man's actions are diversified and admit of as many legrees of goodness or evil, as there are men. In order hat they are adequately and justly dealt with, the ewards and punishments should be similarly liversified, and this is possible only by such an rrangement, as "re-births," whereby infinite degrees f happiness and misery are secured.

This doctrine of *Metampsychosis* is inculcated in he Parsi Books as well as those of the Vedic religion. We find in *Hoshang*:—"To reject the old frame and assume a new body is inevitable."* Again in *Nam*

* *Hoshang* 14.

Mihabad we read:—"Every man finds a place in the heavens and the stars, according to his knowledge and actions, and always lives there (66). And he who wishes to go into the world, and has done good deeds, is born as a king, minister, ruler, or a rich man (67) ; so that he may reap the fruits of his deeds (68). According to the prophet Bashadabad those griefs, troubles and diseases, which befall kings during their enjoyments are due to the evil deeds of their previous birth." (69)*

On this passage, Sasan V. comments:—"They reap the good results of their good deeds, and suffer pains for their evil deeds. For God cannot be just, if he does not punish evil deeds or punishes them inadequately."

To resume the quotation from *Mihabad* :—

" Those who are evil doers are first punished with grief and pain in the human body ; for example, illness, suffering in the mother's womb and out of it suicide, sufferings endured from ferocious and hurtful, animals, death, poverty, all this from the date of birth up till death, is the result of past deeds. And the same is true of good things enjoyed (70).

" The lion, the tiger, the leopard, the panther, the wolf, and all ferocious animals which cause injury to other animals, birds, beasts,—worms, were previously men possessed of authority and dignity ; while those animals† which are now killed by men were

---

* *Mihabad* 66-69.

† These details might appear rather fantastic. Similar and even more fanciful details and explanations will be found in some Sanskrit works also, But they are no essential parts of the doctrinoe of *Metempsychosis*, properly understood, and should not detract from its value as the most philosophical and rational explanation of divine justice and of unequal disribution of the good things of the world.

their ministers, servants and helpers, and did evil deeds under their instructions and with their help, and caused pain to the harmless and innocent animals. Now they undergo the punishment at the hands of their Ruler and Master (71)."

"At last these animals, once men of dignity, now in the shape of ferocious animals, die of some pain, disease, or wound according to their actions. And if part of their sins is still left, they will be so born a second time along with their helpers, and will undergo the punishment (72)."

Sasan V., in his commentary on the above, adds:—"And they will continue to undergo the punishment till it is completed, whether in one life, or in ten, or in hundred, and so on."

Mihabad continues :—

"Do not ye kill the *zandbar* animals, *i.e.*, animals which do not kill other animals, nor cause hurt to others, *e.g.*, the horse, the cow, the camel, the mule, the ass, and the like. Ye do not make them lifeless. For the all-knowing God has ordained their punishment, and makes them suffer the consequences of their past deeds, in a different manner; for example, the horse is used for riding on, and the ox, the camel, the mule. and the ass are employed for carrying loads.—(74).

"If a rational man knowingly kills a *zandbar* animal, and is not punished for his conduct by God, or by King in this life, he is punished for it in his next life (75).

"To kill innocent *zandbar* animals is as bad as to kill stupid and innocent men (76).

(For like stupid persons) *zandbar* animals which are employed as beasts of burden, have been made so by the wrath of God (77).

'If a * *Tundbar* animal, *i.e*, one which kills other animals, or causes hurt to them, kills a *zandbar*, then it is a punishment for the killer, a consequence of the deeds of it whose blood has been shed and a result of the conduct of it which has been made lifeless; for *tundbar* animals are intended for punishing (*i.e.*, are an instrument of punishment) (79).

"It is proper and advisable to kill *tundbar* animals; for in their last and previous birth they were ferocious and murderous (men), and used to kill innocent creatures. He who kills them acquires merit. Those among men who are foolish (80), ignorant and evil-doers, undergo the punishment for their folly, ignorance and evil doing by assuming the forms of *vegetables* (8).

"Those whose thoughts and deeds are wicked, assume the form of *minerals*† till the sins of each soul are punished and none left unpunished, and after suffering pain and degradations, they again get human bodies, and then will again reap the consequences of what deeds they do in the human form." (83).‡

* The reasoning is as follows :—*Tundbar* animals, the lion, etc., being devoid of reason are not responsible agents. They are like an instrument of punishment in the hands of God. Therefore if a *zandbar* animal is killed by a *tundbar*, it must be considered to be a punishment from God. But not so if a man kills a *zandbar* animal; for man being endowed with reason is a responsible agent. Therefore if he kills a *zandbar* he incurs sin. The doctrine is substantially the same as taught in the books of Vedic religion. Lower animals are called *Bhogyonis*, *i.e.*, they are merely states of existence in which the soul is punished for its misdeeds. Man, on the contrary, is a *Karmayoni*, *i.e.*, he not only reaps the harvest of his past actions, good or bad, but is also accountable for what he does in his present life. This is clearly stated also in clause 83 of Sasan I.

† "The theory that the soul can also assume the from of *minerals* is not in accord with Vedic doctrine.

‡ *Nama Mihabad*, 70-83.

In section 5 and 6 of the last chapter we said that the Bible and the Koran borrowed their theory of heaven and hell from the Zend Avesta. This is true. Only we should remember that the highest or seventh heaven of the Parsis called Garatman *i. e.*, the abode of light)* where Ahuramazda lives with the Ameshaspends and the souls of the pure, corr sponds to the Vedic ideas of *Mukti* (or emancipation) wherein the soul enjoys perfect bliss by its union with God, and that the remaining degrees of the Zoroastrian heaven represent the forms of existence higher than that of man which the soul assumes in its onward journey to the state of *Mukti*; while the so-called stories of hell appear to symbolize the several forms of lower existence which the soul assumes in its transmigrations. This is amply borne out by the *Dasatir*. Sasan I says:—"The soul migrates from one body into another: Those who are free from all evil things see God. Those who are of inferior merits live in the heavens; those who are still inferior, go from one elemental body into another."† On this Sasan V. comments:—"Those who are good men of the first or highest order and have reached perfection in speech and action go to the world ‡ of light. Next to them are those men who have freed themselves from the connection of elements. They go to that particular heaven with which they have formed a connection and attain to the happiness of the intelligence appertaining to that heaven. If the souls are not freed

* In the Vedas also *Mukti* or heaven is called by such names as *Svah* स्वः *Dyauh* द्यौः which signify light.

† *Sasan* I., 19.

‡ This apparently corresponds to the *Vedic Mukti*, and is the seventh heaven of the Parsis called "Garatman."

from the connection of element, but their goodness or virtue preponderates, they go from one (human) body to another in the ascending order till they get salvation. This round is called *Farhangsar*. In consequence of bad deeds the souls assume the form of some speechless animal according to their deserts. This is called *Nangsar*. Sometimes they migrate into vegetables which is called *Tangsar*. Sometimes they become minerals which is called *Sangsar*. And these grades are the *storeys or divisions of hell*." It is thus clear that the Zoroastrian theory of heaven and hell, as interpreted by eminent Parsi *Dasturs* (or divines) themselves, is not to be understood in a literal sense, and is by no means inconsistent with the theory of metempsychosis. In Judaism, Christianity and Mohammedanism the true import of the teaching was more and more forgotten, the doctrine of Metempsychosis was lost sight of, and heaven and hell came to be regarded as names of places, rather than of the conditions of the soul.

SECTION 9.—FLESH-EATING CONDEMNED.

A belief in transmigration of souls naturally engenders a respect for animal life, and leads one to look upon it as somethig sacred. As an instance of this logical consequence, we refer to the clauese 74 to 77 of *Nama Mihabad* quoted in the last section. It is no wonder then that both the Vedic and Parsi religions condemn the eating of flesh and the slaughter of dumb and innocent sentient animals for the mere relish of the palate. It is generally known that meat-eating is not allowed by the Vedic religion. The books of Parsi religion also prohibit it. The reader

might have already noticed this from the general tenor of the clauses 71-76 of *Mihabad*, quoted already. Further on he says:—

"Some are endowed with intelligence and yet do evil deeds, *viz.*, those men who slaughter innocent animals and fill their flesh."*

Again in *Javansher* we are told of a conference in which the representatives of men and lower animals assembled for discussion. The fox thus spoke to man. "Beasts are compelled to kill other animals, because their natural food is flesh. But man is not necessitated to eat flesh. Why should he then deprive animals of their life? As you have thus become, sinners, the pious and God-worshipping men flee far away from you."† The representative of men was unable to reply.

Though flesh-eating is forbidden, it is not all kinds of animals, the killing of which is prohibited. Both the Vedic and Parsi religions allow the killing of hurtful and dangerous animals, (*vide Mihabad* 80 quoted in the preceding section).

Section 10.—Veneration for the Cow.

The religions of both the Hindus and the Parsis enjoin a special veneration for the cow, of course, on account of its utility for agricultural and domestic purposes. What can be clearer, and at the same time more eloquent, than the following verse of the *Zend Avesta*‡:—

"In the ox is our need; in the ox is our speech; in the ox is our victory; in the ox is our food;§ in the ox is our tillages that makes food grow for us."

---

* *Nama Mihabad*, 131.

† *Javansher*, 119.

‡ *Behram Yasht*, 66.

§ "*In the ox is our food*"—Let nobody infer from this that the ancient Parsis ate beef. The succeeding clause makes the point perfectly clear: "in the ox is our tillage that makes food grow for us."

The idea of the sacredness of the cow has its roots much deeper in the Parsi religion than even in the Vedic religion. For it is connected with the very basis of their Revelation and the mission of Zoroaster. We will quote from the Rev. L. H. Mill's summary* of Yasna XXI,

"The soul of the kine† as representing the herds of holy Iranian people, their only means of honourable livelihood, raises its voice and expressing the profoundest needs of an affected people, addresses Ahura, and his divine order Asha, in bitterness :

"Unto you (O Ahura and Asha) the soul of the kine (our sarced herds and folk) cried aloud. 'For whom did you create me, and by whom did you fashion me? On me comes the assault of wrath and of violent power, the blow of dissolution, audacious insolenee, and thievish might! None other pasture given have I than you. Therefore do ye teach me good tillage for the fields, my only hope of welfare."

Zarathushtra here intervenes and joins the kine's soul in her supplications and prayers. Ahura then appoints him to the sacred office of a prophet and lawgiver.

Section 11. Rituals: Yajnas.

From religious doctrines we turn to rituals; and the similarity which one finds in this respect between the Vedic and the Parsi religions is equally remarkable.

---

* *Zend Avesta*, Part III, p. 3.

†Dr. Haug interprets it as "the soul of earth," *go* meaning both the 'cow' and the 'earth.'—See section 11.

In section 7 of the last Chapter we have already observed how important a part the ceremony of *Agnihotra* plays in the Vedic rituals. It is one of the five daily practices enjoined on the Aryas. It enters into each of the 16 *Sanskaras* or purificatory ceremonies which are to be performed in a man's lifetime from the time of conception up till death. We have also remarked how punctilious the Parsis are about the performance of this ceremony—so much so that they have come to be nicknamed as "fire-worshippers."

The similarity in the rituals of the two religions extends even to the nomenclature that is employed. We will quote from Dr. Haug: "At the very outset the attentive reader of the Vedas and the Zend Avesta will observe the identity of a good many terms, referring to priestly functions. The very name for 'priest' in the Zend Avesta, *Athrava* is to be recognised in *Atharvan* of the Vedas, by which term, priest of fire and *soma* is meant, The Vedic words *Ishti*... and *Ahuti* are to be recognized in the *Ishti* and *Azauti* of the Zend Avesta...The particular names of several officiating priests at the time of performing a solemn ceremony are the same in both religions. The *Hota* or the reciter of the Mantras of the Rig Veda is identical with the *Zota* priest, while the *Adhwarya* or managing priest who has to prepare everything for the *Hota*, is the same with *Rathwi* (now called *Raspi*) who is only the servant of *Zota* or chief priest."*

"The word *Yasna* corresponds exactly to the S. *Yajna* "sacrifice."†

* Haug's *Essays*, 280.

† *Ibid.* p. 139.

The similarity does not end here. Dr. Haug shows the identity of several important rites of the Parsis with those of the ancient Aryas of this country:—

"The most important part of the offerings in both the *Jyotishoma* sacrifice and the *Yjashne* ceremony is the juice *Soma* plant. In both the twigs of the plant itself.....in their natural state are brought to the sacred spot, where the ceremony is to take place, and the juice is there extracted during the recital of prayers. The contrivances used for obtaining the juice as well as the vessel employed are somewhat different, but on closer inquiry an original identity may be recognised.

"*The Darsha Paurnima-ishti* (new and full moon sacrifice) seems to correspond with *Darun* ceremoy of the Parsis. Both are very simple. The Brahmans use chiefly the Purodasha or sacrificial cakes, the Parsis the sacred bread (Darun) which corresponds to the Purodash."

"The *Chaturmasya-ishti* or the sacrifice offered every four months or two seasons, corresponds to the *Gahanbar* ceremony of Parsis which is celebrated six times a year."*

Many scholars maintain that the Vedas sanction the killing of animals, even the cow being not excepted for purposes of sacrifice. The question is of too controversial a nature to be fit for discussion in a treatise like this.† We shall, however, like to say a word about the Vedic ceremony of *Gomedha* which is supposed to mean "cow-sacrifice.', Now we find this ceremony also in the Zend Avesta, where it is called

* Haug's *Essays* p. 285.

† There is a similar controversy as to whether the killing of animals for sacrifices is not allowed by the Zend Avesta.

by the identical "name *Gomeza*." In his *Sattyartha Prakasha** Swami Dayananda Saraswati explains that the Sanskrit word *go* means not only 'cow' but also (1) 'the earth' and (2) 'senses' *Gomedha* means (1) *exoterically* (*i.e.*, in its *adhibhautika* sense) the ploughing of land for agriculture, and (2) *esoterically* *i.e.*, in its *adhyatmika* sense), the control of one's senses. Some people are apt to ridicule this interpretation as far-fetched and even condemn it as a dishonest handling of the Vedas. But let us see what no less an authority than Dr. Haug says about the corresponding or identical Parsi ceremony "*Gomeza*:"— "*Geush urva* means the universal soul of Earth, the cause of all life and growth. The literal meaning of the word "soul of the cow" implies a simile, for the Earth is compared to a cow. *By its cutting and dividing ploughing is to be understood.* The meaning of that decree used by Ahura Mazda and the heavenly council is that the soil is to be tilled; it, therefore, enjoins agriculture as a religious duty."† The italics are ours, and we call the reader's particular attention to them. Is this not the same thing as what Swami Dayananda says about the Vedic "Gomedha?"

In a foot note Dr. Haug adds "*Gaus* has in Sanskrit the two meanings 'Cow' and 'Earth.' In Greek *Ge*' earth' (*e.g.*, in the compound word Geography) is to be traced to this word." Now it is a fact of deepest significance, that both in Sanskrit and Zend, the word '*go*' bears the double meaning of "cow" and "earth." In § 10 we have narrated the

* *Vide Sattyartha Prakash* Chapter XI, p. 305 (5th Edition).
† Haug's *Essays*, p. 148.

Parsi tradition about the origin of Zoroaster's divine mission, how the "soul of cow"—(or according to Dr. Haug's interpretation the "soul of earth"), feeling oppressed by the lawlessness of men, raised its plaintive cry to heaven, and how Ahura Mazda heard it and appointed Zoroaster as his messenger, prophet, and lawgiver for men. The reader will be apt to compare it with a somewhat similar story related in the *Bhagwata Purana* as to how at the commencement of *Kaliyuga* or the "Iron age," the earth assuming the form of a cow repaired to the God *Vishnu* and supplicated for mercy, and how *Vishnu* then promised to relieve her of the burden of misery by himself appearing on the earth in human form. There is no doubt that the story of Zend Avesta is the older of the two. But what we mean to impress on the reader is the fact that in both Sanskrit and Zend, the *cow* and the *earth* are not only connected in *language* by having a common name "*go*" to designate them, but that they are also interlinked in *thought*, the connecting link being certainly "agriculture," for which both are necessary. The reader will remember the concluding prayer of the "soul of the kine" to Ahura Mazda, "therefore do ye teach me good tillage for t e fields, my only hope of welfare." Dr. Haug says that the Parsi religion "enjoins agriculture as a religious duty," and this is the whole meaning of "gomeza" according to him. If the reader turns to the Vedas, he will find that agriculture is equally sanctified by their teaching.* To Western scholars there should be nothing strange in this. For according

* We refer the curious reader to the *Rig Veda*, mandal X, sukta 101, mantra 3 to 7.

to them the very word "Arya,"—(by which name the ancestors of both the Hindus and the Parsis called themselves) is etymologically connected with the word "earth" and was employed by them, because they (*i.e.*, the Aryas), being civilized people, lived by agriculture, while the other tribes of ancient times; being generally uncivilized, were nomads depending for their livelihood chiefly on hunting.

The veneration of the Hindu for the cow is proverbial. That of the ancient Parsis is equally unquestionable. Is it then not unreasonable to say that the Vedic "Gomedha" ceremony would mean the *killing of a cow*, when due regard being had both to language and thought, we can interpret it to mean the *tilling of the soil*? But what astonishes us most is that though Western scholars have nothing to say against Dr. Haug's explanation about "Gomeza" given above, people would not be wanting who can sneer and jeer at Swami Dayananda's identical interpretation of the identical "*Gomedh*" ceremony.

SECTION 12.—SOME MINOR SIMILARITIES.

We shall now show some other, though minor, similarities or coincidences between the two religions.

(*a*) Both Vedic and Zoroastrian philosophies regard *actions* as of three kinds, *viz.*, those done (1) in thought (2) in speech and (3) in deed. We may quote from the Brahmana of Yajur Veda :—

"यन्मनसा ध्यायति तद् वाचा वदति यद् वाचा वदित तत् कर्मणा करोति ॥

"What a man contemplates in thought, he speaks in speech, what he speaks in speech, he does in deed."*

*Also see Manu's classification of *Manasa*, *Vachika*, and *Kayika* actions in Chap. XII, pp. 3-9.

About Zoroaster's philosophy, Dr. Hau remarks :—

"His moral philosophy was moving in the Triad of thought, word and deed."* Again he says:

These words *humatem* (well-thought), *hukhtem* (well-spoken), *hvarshtam*§ (well-done) contain the fundamental principles of Zoroastrian morality and are repeated habitually || on many occasions."¶ We may illustrate the above by quoting one or two verses from the Zend Avesta. "(Through the words) well-thought, well-spoken, well-done."**

"What is well-thought ? The righteous mind (thought). What is well spoken ? The munificent word. What is well-done ? (That done) by the praising creatures first in righteousness."††

(*b*) Students of the Vedas must have heard of *Soma* plant so highly celebrated in the Vedas as well as in the later Vedic literature. It is doubtful whether it was a collective name for all medicinal herbs. If the latter supposition be true, the plant has not yet been discovered or at least not identified with any of the existing known plants. Prof. Max Muller says in the *Academy*‡‡ of Oct. 25, 1884.

"Even in the earliest liturgical works, in the Sutras and Brahmans, the same admission is made,

---

* Haug's *Essays*, p. 300.

† S. *Sumatam* सुमतम् ।

‡ S. *Suktam* सूक्तम् ।

§ S. *Sukritam* सुकृतम् ।

|| Like the Sanskrit phrase मनसा, वाचा कर्मणा "in thought, in speech and in deed."

¶ *Ibid.*

** *Yasna*, XIX . 16.

†† *Ibid.* 19.

‡‡ Quoted in the Essay on "The sacred Homa tree" by Nasarvanji F. Belmoria in *Zorastrianism in the light of Theosophy*, pp. 98-99.

viz., that true Soma is very difficult to be procured, and that substitutes may be used instead. When it was procured, it is said that it was brought by barbarians from the North, and that it had to be brought under very peculiar circumstances." He further points out "how Russian or English emissaries in the northern region of the neutral zone might render useful service, if in their wanderings they would look out for a plant, resembling the Soma plant." For the Professor concludes that "wherever that plant grew naturally, it would be safe to place the cradle of the Aryan race, or at all events of the ancestors of the people, who when they had migrated south, spoke either Sanskrit or Zend."*

Whatever the true Soma plant may be, what we mean to show here is that it is eqully celebrated in the Zend Avesta where it is known by the identical name *Homa* † or *Haoma*.

We shall quote a few verses of the Zend Avesta to show how similar to the Vedic description of Soma, are the sentiments expressed about Homa in the Zend Avesta :—

"This second blessing I beseech of thee, O Homa, thou that drivest death afar !— this body's health (before that blest life is attained). This third blessing I beseech of thee, O Homa, thou that drivest death afar, the long vitality of life." ‡

"O yellow Homa, I keep in thee by my wor, (thy power of giving) knowledge, strength, victory,

---

* Quoted in the Essay on on "The sacred Homa tree" by Nasarvanji F. Belmoria in *Zoroastrianism in the light of Theosophy*, 98—99.

† As we have already remarked, Sanskrit *s* is frequently changed into Zend *h*, *vide* group (1) of the words given in § 1 of this Chapter.

‡ Homa Yasht, Yasna IX.

health, healing, advancement, growth, vigour to the whole body, understanding of subjects of every kind. I keep in Thee (by my word) that (power) that I might wander freely in the word, putting an end to troubles, and annihilating the destructive powers of the enemies of the good creation)."

We shall now quote a few verses from the Rig Veda :—

सना च सोम जेषि च पपान महिश्रवः ॥ अथानो वस्यस कृधि ॥ सना ज्योतिः सनास्वर्विश्वा च सोम सौभग ॥ अथानो वस्यसस्कृधि ॥ सना दक्ष मुतक्रतुमपसोम मृधो जहि ॥ अथानो वस्यसस्कृधि ॥

ऋ० मं० ९, सू० ४ मं १, २, ३ ॥

"O pure Soma, the great (or nourishing) food, give us (the following things), and lead us to victory; and make us happy.

O Soma, give us light (brightness of understanding), give us blessedness, give us all good things; and make us happy.

O Soma, give us strength, give us wisdom, drive away our enemies, and make us happy." †

Some Western scholars anxious to prove that the ancient Aryas were not above eating meat or drinking wine generally, maintain that Soma was some intoxicating plant, and Soma juice a sort of fermented liquor thereof. The view is belied by what is said about Soma (or Homa) both in the Vedas and the Zend Avesta. Darmesteter, the learned translator of the Zend Avesta, rightly remarks : "It (Soma or Homa) comprises in it the

* *Homa Yasht*, 17.

† *Rig Veda*, IX. 22, 1-4.

power of life of all the vegetable kingdom."* It is called in Zend Avesta "the king of healing plants." and the same epithet is applied to it in the Vedas.†

There can be no question, then, that Soma is the name of a medicinal herb. It is possible, as Prof. Max Muller conjectures that Soma does not grow in India, but in some unknown northern regions. Loss of its identity and consequent obscurity of its true character naturally invested it in course of time with a halo of sanctity. In the Zend Avesta, it is the giver of immortality. And when the Zoroastrians developed the theory of ressurection, it was this Homa (or Soma) whose aid was called in for resuscitating the dead bodies to life. Again it is this Soma, or its two varieties called White Homa, and the Painless Tree which became the prototype of the Biblical "Tree of Knowledge," and the "Tree of Life" supposed to have existed in Paradise. We have already referred to the opinion of Dr. Speigel on this point in section 8 of the last Chapter, and have also quoted Prof. Max Muller to show that even he cannot deny a similarity between the Soma or Homa and the Biblical "Tree of Life." We may also quote Mad ame Blavatsky's opinion on this question ; "Plainly speaking Soma is the fruit of the tree of Knowledge forbidden by the jealous Elohim to Adam and Eve or *Yehvi* 'lest man should become as one of us.' " ‡

13.—Summary.

We have shown that the doctrines and ceremonials of the Zoroastrians have a most remarkable similarity to those of the Vedas. We have also shown that the language and even versification of

---

* *Zend Avesta*, Part I, Introduction, p. LXIX.

† See Rig Veda, X. 97, 18-22.

‡ *Secret Doctrine*, Vol. II. pp. 498, 499.

most closely related to those of the Vedas. Further, it has also been shown that the followers of both the religions called themselves by the common name "Aryas" in ancient times. Can any one suggest for a moment that all these resemblances and coincidences are accidental? The suggestion has never been made, and never will be made. We must accept one or the other of the following three theories to account for them :—

(1) That the language and religion of the Vedas are derived from those of the *Zend Avesta*.

(2) That the language and religion of the Vedas and those of the *Zend Avesta* had a common source, and were both derived from an older and now extinct system of language and religion.

(3) That the language and religion of the *Zend Avesta* are derived from the Vedic language and religion.

The theory No. (1) has been never put forward by any authority, and the Vedas are believed to be older than the Zend Avesta by all scholars whose opinion has any weight on the subject.* The choice lies only between the last two theories mentioned above. We hold to the theory No. (3). Before adducing our reasons for this belief, we shall cite a few authorities supporting our view.

We have already quoted the opinion of Sir William Jones on the striking similarity between Sanskrit and *Zend* languages.

"It follows," continues Sir William Jones, "that the language of the *Zend* was at least a dialect of the Sanskrit approaching perhaps as nearly to it as the Prakrit, or other popular idioms which

* *See Note on the chronology of the six great religions* at the of the Introduction.

we know to have been spoken in India two thousand years ago."*

Darmesteter in his Translation of the *Zend Avesta* (*Sacred Books of the East Series*) refers to several other authorities holding this veiw, though he himself accepts the theory No. (2) given above. It should, however, be noted that like Sir William Jones these authorities concern themselves with the relationship of the two languages rather than that of the two religions. Speaking of Father Paulo de Saint Barthelemy, Darmesteter says: "His conclusions were that in a far remote antiquity Sanskrit was spoken in Persia and India, and that it gave birth to the *Zend* language.†" Darmesteter continues: "In 1808, John Lydon regarded *Zend* as a Prakrit dialect parallel to Pali..... .....In the eyes of Erskine, *Zend* was a Sanskrit dialect imported from India by the founders of Mazdaism, but never spoken in Persia." About Peter von Bohlen, he says: "According to him Zend is a *Prakrit* dialect as it had been pronounced by Jones, Lyden and Erskine."‡

For the following reasons we hold it to be sufficiently proved that the Zoroastrian religion is derived from the Vedas :—

(i) In the Zend Avesta, Zoroaster speaks of an older Revelation which could be no other than the Veda.

We will quote Haug :—

"In the Gathas (which are the oldest parts of the Zend Avesta), we find Zarathushtra alluding to old revelation, (Yas. XL, VI, 6), and praising the wisdom of Saoshyants, Atharvas, "fire-priest," (Yas.

* *Asiatic Researches*, 11, § 3.

† Zend *Avesta*, Part I, Introduction, P. xxi.

‡ *Ibid.*

xlvi, 3 xlviii, 12). He exhorts his party to respect and revere the Angra (Yas, xviii, 15), *i. e.*, the Angiras of the Vedic hymns, who formed one of the most ancient and celebrated priestly families of the ancient Aryans, and who seem to be more closely connected with the ante-Zoroastrian form of Parsi religion than any other of the later Brahmanical families. These Angiras are often mentioned together with the Atharvans, or "fire-priests" and both are regarded in the Vedic literature as the authors, (we should say *rishis*,* of the Atharva Veda, which is called the Veda of the Atharvangiras or the Atharvan or Angiras Veda, *i.e.*, the Veda of the Atharvans or Angiras.†"

Again Dr. Haug says:—

"In his own works he (*i.e*, Zarathushtra) calls himself a *mathran*, 'reciter of mantras,' a *duta* 'messenger' sent by Ahura Mazda."‡

(ii) In *Homa* Yasht (a chapter of the Zend Avesta) an enumeration is made of four persons who had prepared *Homa i.e.*, performed the Vedic ceremony of Soma-ishti (सोमेष्टि or सोमयाग) before the time of Zarathushtra. All the names except Zarathushtra's own father *Paurushaspa* (whose name also can be at once rendered into Sanskrit *Paurushasva*), occur in the Vedic literature.

The *first* who prepared Homa was *Vivanhvat*. "A son was born to him, *Yima*, the bright, possessing a good congregation, the most majestic, who gazes most, at the sun among men." The *second* was *Athwya* of whom Thraetaona, was born " who smote Azhi Dahaka, the serpent." The *third* was *Thrita*

* The parenthesis is ours.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 294.

‡ *Ibid*, p. 297.

to whom were born two sons. The *fourth* was *Zarathushtra's* own father *Paurushaspa* : " Thou wert born to him,—(says Homa to Zarathushtra)—thou holy Zarathushtra, in the dwelling of Paurshaspa, created against the demons, devoted in the belief of Ahura, renowned in *Aryana vaeja* or " the Aryan country."*

Now the first of these, *Vivanhvat* and his son *Yima* are identical with *Vivasvat* and his son *Yama* **वैवस्वतयम** famous in the Vedic literature. In the Zend Avesta Yima is represented as a king and is called *Yima Khshaita* (S. Kshattra = a king) an epithet which in the *Shahnama* of Firdausi becomes *Jamshaid.* Dr. Haug tracesthis tradition to the Vedic literature and says : " *Yima Khshaita* (Jamshed) and *Yama raja.*† The names and epithets are the same. Yima is identical with Yama, and Khshaita means " king," the same as *raja.* The family name of both is the same *Vivanhao* or son of *Vivanhvat* in the Zend Avesta (*see* the second Fargard of the Vendidad) and *Vaivsavata* or son of Vivaswat in the Veda."‡

Yima is also, according to the Zend Avesta, the first prophet, " The fair Pima, O holy Zarathushtra (says Ahura Mazda), he was the first mortal before thee with whom I, Ahura Mazda, did converse, whom I taught the law of Zarathushtra."§

The second predecessor of Zarathushtra who is said to have performed Soma Yajna, *viz.*, *Athwya* and his son

---

*. *Homa Yasht*— Quoted in the Essay on the sacred Haoma in *Zoroastrianism in the Light of Theosophy.*

† As we have already said Z. *Khshatia* is to be derived direcly from S. *Khsattra* which word is used in the Vedas in the sense of " king" In latter Sanskrit *Kshattra* becomes obsolete. It is from this, however, that the word Kshattriya (royal or warrior class) is derived क्षत्राद्घः । अ० ४।१।१३८ Panini IV 1,138.

‡ Haug's *Essays*, p. 277.

§ Fargard II, 2.

Thraitana (the *Feridun* of *Shahnama*)—are indentical with Aptya and Traitana. Dr. Haug says:—"*Thraitana* Feridun) is easily recognized in the Vedic *Traitana* .....His father is called *Athwya* which corresponds exactly with the frequent surname of Trita in the Vedas, *viz Aptya* *

The *third viz.*, *Thrita* is is identical with Vedic Trita. Dr. Haug says:—

"*Thrita*, one of the Sama family (from which the great hero Rustam sprang) is, in the Zend Avesta, the first physician, the curer of the diseases created by Ahriman, an idea which we find also attached to Trita in the Vedas. He is said in the Atharva Meda (VI, 113, 1) to extinguish illness in man .....He grants along life (Taittiriya Sanhita, i. 8,102). Any evil thing is to be sent to him to be appeased (Rv. VII. 47, 13.) This circumstance is hinted at in the Zend Avesta by the surname *Sama* which means appeaser."†

It is not a little remarkable that names of all the predecessors of Zarathushtra (except his own father) should be traceable to the Vedic literature The above enumeration is obviously a sort or reminiscences of Vedic allegories or traditions still retained by the Iranians in Zarathushtra's time.

(iii) There is in the Zend Avesta a clear and unmistakeable reference to the *Athrva Veda*. We will reproduce it as it is quoted by Dr. Haug: "Homa deposed Keresani from his sovereignty whose lust of power had so increased that he said: no *Athravas'* (fire-priests') repetition of *Apam avishtish* ("approach of the waters") shall be tolerated in my empire to make it prosper; (and) he would annihilate all that are prosperous, (and) put down all that are prosperous by destroying them."

* Haug's *Essays* p. 278.

† Haug's *Essays*, p. 278.

IN a foot-note Dr. Haug adds:—"It is evident from the context that *Keresani* is the name of some enemy of the Atharva religion; and there can be little doubt that he is the *Krisanu* of the Vedic books, (Aitareya Brahmana. III, 26)."

In anther foot-note the learned Doctor says about the words "*apam aivishtish*" occurring in the above verse of the Zend Avesta:—

"These words are evidently a technical name for the *Atharva Veda Sanhita*, which commences in some manuscripts with the Mantra "Shanno * devirabhishtaye, apo bhavanto pitaye" in which both words occur; this Mantra is omitted at the commencement of the printed edition, but is given in I. 6. 1, where it also occurs in the manuscript alluded to. That the Atharva Veda actually commenced with these words about 2,000 years ago is clearly shown by Patanjali's quotation of the initial words of the four Vedas, in his introduction to the *Mahabhashya* where the words *shanno devirabhishtaye* represent the *Atharva Veda*.†"

This clear and unqestionable reference to the Atharva Veda is proof conclusive of the priority‡ of the Vedas to the Zend Avesta.

---

* This is the *Achamana* Mantra well-known to every Arya,—*Shanno devi* RABHISHTAYE APO *bhavantu pitaye. Shanyorabhi sravantunah.* The two words which we have put in capitals occur in the verse of the Zend Avesta with but slight alteration and in the reverse order,

† Haug's *Essays* p: 182.

‡ Western scholars maintain that ten Vedas were written at different periods of time and that the *Atharva Veda* is the least ancient of the four Vedas. If even the Atharva Veda could be shown to be older than the Zend Avesta, it follows *a fortiori* that the other three Vedas are still more ancient than the Zend Avesta.

(iv) It can be proved that the ancient Parsis were a colony from India.

Professor Max Muller says in clear terms :—

"It can now be proved even by geographical evidence that the Zoroastrians had been settled in India before they emigrated into Persia.....That the Zoroastrians and their ancestors started from India during the Vedic period can be proved as distinctly as that the inhabitants of Messilia started from Greece."*

Still more unambiguous are the words used by the learned Professor in his lectures on the Science of Language :—

The Zoroastrians were a colony from Northern India. They had been together for a time with the people whose sacred songs have been preserved to us in the Veda. A schism took place and the Zoroastrians migrated westward to Arachasia and Persia... They gave to the new cities and to the rivers along which they settled the names of cities and rivers familiar to them, and reminding them of the localities which they had left. Now as a Persian *h* points to a Sanskrit *s*, *Harayu* would be in Sanskait *Sarayu*. One of the sacred rivers of India (a river mentioned in the Veda...) has the name of Sarayu, the modern Sarju."†

Besides 'Harayu,' and 'Sarayu' referred to by Professor Max Muller, many other names of Persian localities can be traced to Sanskrit names. For example :—

(*a*) *Euphrates*, the name of a famous river in Persia, or '*Farat*,' as it is more generally called, is to be traced to the word 'Bharata,' a very ancient name in Sanskrit not only of this country (India),

* *Chips from a German workshop*, Vol. I, p. 235.

† *Lectures on the Science of Language*, Vol. I, p. 235.

but also of its inhabitants. We still use the word 'Bharata,'* 'Bharatavarsha' or 'Bharatakhanda' for India. That it was originally the name of the people will be evident to those who have read the great Sanskrit Epic the *Mahabharata*. The very name "*Mahabharata*" signifies the 'history of (Maha the great (Bharata) people, the sons of king Bharata.' The people of India who called themselves 'Bharata' emigrated and settled on the banks of the river to which they gave their name. That Sanskrit *bh* is changed in Persian *ph* or *f* is evident from (Vedic) Sanskrit verb *gribh* † 'to take or accept' which in Persian becomes *grift*.

(*b*) *Babylon*—The name of a celebrated city in Persia – once the capital of a great empire, situated on the banks of the Euphrates, can be traced to '*Bhupalan*'—the people of 'Bhupala' who probably emigrated from India and founded this city.

(*c*) The people known as '*Cossaei*,' living on the banks of the Tigris probably emigrated from Kashi or Benares—a city of great antiquity in India.

(*d*) The word *Iran* is ceatainly a corruption of *Aryan*, and was given to the country by the Aryan people who settled there.

In order to prove that a system of religion is derived from another ; three things are to be proved *viz.*, (I) the community of ideas and similarity of doctrines between them ; (2) the priority of one

---

* '*Bharata*' is the patronymic from *Bharata*, and means 'the sons of Bharata,' a celebrated king of ancient India who gave his name to his people and then to his country. He was the son of Dushyanta and Shakuntala whose story is celabrated in Kalidasa's immortal comedy of 'Shakuntala'

† In modern Sanskrit the form of the verb is *grih*, but in Vedic Sanskrit is invariably *Gribh*.

to the other ; and (3) a channels or channel of communication between them. Now, the similarity of doctrines between the Vedic and Zoroastrian religions is too manifest to be questioned by any body. The priority of the Vedas to the Zend Avesta has also been clearly shown. The channel of communication is selfevident, when it is proved that the Iranians were a body of colonists from India, and emigrated from here in the Vedic period. It would also be easy to point out channels of subsequent communication. For instance, in *Namah Zaradusht*,* we are told that Vyasa went to Persia and held a religious discussion with Zaradusht. God says to Zarathushtra : "A very wise Brahman named Vyasa whose like is scarcely to be found on the earth will come from India. He intends to put to you the question ; Why is not God the immediate creator of all that exists ?" (65, 66).

"Tell him that God created the First Intelligence without the assistance of any other ; other material worlds (He created) through this Intelligence." (67).

"There can attach no blemish to His creatorship on account of the assistance or mediation of the First Intelligence." (68).

The second question will be ; "Why is fire below the sky ; the air below the fire ; the water below the air ; and the earth below water ? " (71),

* This work, though certainly of considerably later date than the Zend Avesta, is ascribed to Zaradusht. The fact is that there have been several personages of this name, as there have been several *Rishis* bearing the names of Brahma, Vashishta, Narada, etc., and possibly of Vyasa too. As many as thirteen Zaradushtras are mentioned in Dabistan. The first of them, who is supposed to be the founder of Parsi religion, was called Spitama Zarathushtra to distinguish him from others.

Then follows an answer to this question which God instructs Zaradusht to return to Vyasa (72—75). Sasan V. in his commentary adds; "Vyasa met Gustaspa face to face in Balakh. The king invited all wise men; Zarathushtra also came out from his prayer room. And Vyasa embraced the religion of Zarathushtra."

This refers to the time of Gustaspa,* the celebrated king of Bactria, who is said to have first promulgated Zoroastrianism as a State religion about 550 B C., a most important time in the development of Zoroastrianism. From the highly eulogistic words in which Vyasa is spoken of, it is possible that the personage meant is no other than the well known author of the *Vedanta Sutras* and of the commentary on Patanjali's *Yoga Sutras*. Sasan V. wrote his comentary in comparatively recent times, and, therefore, his statement about the conversion of *Vyasa* to Zoroastrianism need not be taken seriously. While it is of no little significance that the Parsi books themselves supply evidence of a contact between two great teachers of the two religions at a most important and epoch-making time in the history of Zoroastrainism.

Coming down to still later times we find that Sasan I., from whose works we have quoted more than once, not only lived in India, but also wrote his works here. In clause 38 of his book God is made to say:—"Blessed be thou, for I have accepted thy de-

* This is a later form of the real name of this king which was *Vistaspa* corresponding to Sanskrit *Vistashva*. In Greek books he is known as *Hystaspes*. According to a Parsi writer, Dr. S. A. Khapadia, M.D., L.R.C.P., Vistaspa or Gustaspa flourished nearly 3,500 years ago. (*Vide* his 'Teaching of Zoroaster and the Philosophy of the Parsi Religion, *Wisdom of the East Series*, p. 15 to 18). This nearly tallies with the period assignod to the great Vyasa in Hindu chronology.

sire. "Sasan V. says in his commentary on this: It should be stated that after Alexander's conquest of Persia, Sasan, son of Darah separated himself from his uncle, went to India and engaged himself in piety and contemplation of God. God was gracious to him and accepted him as a prophet. *"

Sasan V. goes on to say, that Sasan I., ended his days in India. Thus it was in India that one of the last inspired writers of the Parsis whose writings in philosophical acumen and logical reasoning are not surpassed by the works of any other inspired Parsi writer of the later age, was favoured with divine acceptance, which Sasan V. interprets to mean Divine mission.

It is thus abundantly clear that Zoroastrianism was not only originally derived from the Vedas when the ancestors of the Parsis emigrated from India in the Vedic period), but that it has been influenced by the Vedic religion in its later developments also. This accounts for the fact that it is so very similar to the Vedic religion even as presented in its latest inspired writings or the *Dasatirs*.

We shall conclude this chapter by quoting the opinion of a Parsi writer on the essential unity of the Vedic and Zoroastrian religions: —

" Pure Vedism and pure Zoroastrianism are one. Zoroastrianism sprang up as a reformatory revolution against the corruptions and superstitions which had obscured the primitive Vedic truths and which stood in the place of the pure old religion to serve the purposes of priest-craft and despotism.

---

* Sasan I., p. 38.

Zoroaster did in the far off antiquity what the great and saintly Buddha did after him." (*Zoroastrianism and Theosophy* by Khursedji N. Seervai, Recording Secretary, T. S., Eastern Division).*

Comments are hardly needed. The writer virtually admits that Zoroaster was like Buddha an Arya reformer, whose object was to purge the Vedic religion of its later corruptions Another Parsi writer, Dr. S. A. Kapadia in his recent book, † expresses a similar opinion that the mission of Zoroaster was only to restore the purity of "the primitive Aryan religion, or "the ancient monotheistic religion of the Aryas," (which, however, he does not distinctly say to be the Vedic religion). Says he: "Things which were originally manifestations of God's works, became in course of time personified, assumed shapes of deities in the frail imagination of the devotees. and finally came to be adored in lieu of the Great Architect of the world. Thus a religious system in itself philosophically sublime, degenerated into a system of polytheism, having for its objects, adoration of idols and visible forms of good and evil spirits, reflective of human imagination. This was the great evil which our prophet Zarathushtra laboured to remedy, and to restore the then ancient faith to its pristine purity of Ahura worship was his chief object."

It is probable that when Zoroaster flourished, the pure and monotheistic religion of the Vedas had degenerated into a belief in many gods or *devas* with Indra as their king, and that the teaching of Zoroaster was a protest against this polytheistic tendency of the times. Naturally enough this protest must have

---

* *Zoroastrianism in the light of Theosophy*, p. 63.

† "*The Teachings of Zoroastrianism and the Philosophy of Parsi Religoin*," pp. 16-17.

caused some bitterness of feelings between those who clung to the current belief and the supporters of the reform movement This would explain why *devas* * or gods worshiped by the so-called Vedic Aryas came to be looked upon as 'evil spirits' in the Zend Avesta, *Indra** being regarded as their chief; while the word *Asura** (Z. Ahura) which the Zoroastrians used as the principle name of their Deity, underwent a similar change in Sanskrit, and came to be used invariably in the sense of an 'evil being.'

History, both ancient and modern, furnishes us with many illustrations of the truth that whenever through the selfishness; and ascendency of the priestly class, the religious-apathy and ignorance of the masses. or other causes, a religion has degenerated, there has risen some high-souled man who being fired with a love and enthusiasm for truth and justice, undertakes the difficult task of reformation. What Zoroaster had to do in the far-off antiquity and Gautama Buddha in later times, Raja Ram Mohan Rai, and last though not least, Swami Dayananda Saraswati did in our own times. Each of these great men, according to his own lights, strove to reform the old religion of the Vedas,—the primitive hoary religion of humanity, and to rescue it from the degradation into which ignorance and selfishness had plunged it. Through causes on which we need not dilate here, Zoroastrianism like Buddhism, assumed the form of a new religion. But we think it has been shown clearly enough that the principal truths taught by Zoroaster like those taught by Buddha were based on and derived from the Vedas.

---

* *Vide* foot-notes on the words *Asura*, *Deva*, *Indra* in § 1 of this Chapter. As we have explained there, *Devas* in the Zend Avesta mean "evil spirits," and *Indra*, their king.

CONCLUSION.

We have seen that the principles of Mahomedanism and Christianity are derived from Judaism, those of Christianity being partly traceable also to Buddhism, that the doctrines of Judaism can be deduced from Zoroastrianism, and further that both Zoroastrianism and Buddhism, are directly traceable to the Vedic religion. Can we similarly trace the teachings of the Vedas to any other religion? No; for history does not know of any older or prior religion. Professor Max Muller, who made a lifelong study of the Vedas and than whom there has perhaps been no greater scholar of the science of comparative religion, says:—

"The Vedic religion was the only one, the development of which took place without any extraneous influences.....Even in the religion of the Hebrews, Babylonian, Phœnician and at a later time Persian influences have been discovered."*

There are then obviously only two ways of accounting for the origin of Vedic religion:—either to regard the Vedic Rishis as *inspired* men, or to believe that they themselves by their unaided reason worked out the system of religious thought contained in the Vedas.

Even writers who do not believe in the Vedic revelation admit that the idea of God which is the keystone in the arch of religion, could not be ori-

* "*India what can it teach us?*," p. 129.

ginated by man. Dr. Flint in his "*Theism*,"* says :—

"The God of all those among us who believe in God, even of those who reject Christainity, who reject all revelation, is the God of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. From these ancient Jewish fathers the knowledge of Him has historically descended through an unbroken succession of generations to us. We have inherited it from them. If it had not thus come down to us, if we had not been born into a society pervaded by it, there is no reason to suppose that we should have found it out for ourselves.' Then speaking of the views expressed by the Koran, " every child is born into the religion of nature; its parents make it a Jew, a Christian or a Magian,"—Dr. Flint says :—"The view is, however,, not a true one. A child is born not into the religion of nature, but into blank ignorance, and left entirely to itself, it would probably never find as much religious truth as the most ignorant of parents can teach it."†

Most of our readers who have followed us through the last two chapters will probably agree with us that the idea of God, as taught in the Bible, is derived from the Vedas, through the Zend Avesta, and that long before Abraham, Moses, Isaac, and Jacob were born, the Vedic Rishis had prayed to, and preached about one Eternal and Omnipresent God. We are, therefore, justified in repeating the words of Dr. Flint with necessary alterations, and saying:—The God of all those among us, who believe in God, even of those who reject the *Vedas*, who reject all revelation, is the God of *Agni*, *Vayu*, *Aditya* and *Angirah*. From these primitive *Vedic Rishis* the knowledge of Him has historically descended through an unbroken suc-

* "*Theism*" being the "Baird" Lectures for 1876 by Robert Flint D.D., LL.D,, F. R. S.E., (8th Edition), p. 19.

† *Theism*, p. 20.

cession of generations to us. We have inherited it, from them. If it had not thus come down to us if we had not been born into a society pervaded by it, there is no reason to suppose that we should have found it out for ourselves."

The tendency of some modern thinkers is to explain the existence and growth of all institutions and ideas,—the idea of God not excepted,—by *Evolution*,* *i.e.*, by gradual and continuous progress from crude beginning. Now, while speaking of the three Semitic religions,—Judaism, Christianity, and Mohamedanism, (which alone he regards as *Theistic*)—Prof, Flint remarks about Mohamedanism :—

"Although the latest of the three to arise, Mahommedanism is manifestly the least developed, the least mature. Instead of evolving and extending the theistic idea which it borrwed, it has marred and mutilated it."†

Though himself an uncompromising *evolutionist*, Grant Allen makes a similar remark about Christianity having borrowed the idea of God from Judaism and having marred it. "Christianity," says he :" borrowed form Judaism this magnificent concept, and humanly speaking, proceeded to spoil it by its addition of the Son and the Holy Ghost, who mar the complete unity of the grand Hebrew ideal."‡

In Chapter V,§ 11, and Chapter VI,§ 5, we have shown that the idea of God has similarly deteriorated, rather than improved, in passing from the Vedas into the Zend Avesta, and thence into the Old Testament. How will the Evolutionist explain

* *E.g.*, *see Grant* Allen's *Evolution of the Idea of God* (Rationalisti Press Association Series).

† *Theism*, p. 44.

‡ *Evolution of the Idea of God*. p. 14.

these facts which are so diametrically opposed to his theory of evolution?*

As already observed the choice lies between (1) regarding the Vedic *Rishis* as inspired writers, and (2) ascribing to their unaided reason, a system of religion and philosophy at once pure and perfect, simple and grand, true and consistent, —from which the founders and teachers of all other religions have drawn their inspiration, and which has, thus, in one form or other, brought light and peace to all mankind, guiding them in darkness, strengthening them in danger, and consoling them in affliction. And we should not forget that these *Rishis*, as is generally acknowledged, lived in the most ancient and primitive times when the human races was yet in its childhood. We leave the reader to choose which

---

* We ourselves are *not* opposed to the theory of *evolution* in respect of the idea of God in this sense that by lapse of time and with the ever increasing stock of our knowledge we get better apprehensions of divine attributes. To quote from Dr. Flint's "*Theism*:"—"Thousands of years ago, there were men who said as plainly as could be done or desired that Cod was *Ommipotent*; but surely every one who believes in God will acknowledge that the discoveries of modern astronmy give more overwhelming impression of divine power, than either heathen sage, or Hebrew psalmist can be imagined as possessing. It is ages since men ascribed perfect wisdom to God; but all discoveries of science which help us to understand how the earth is related to other worlds,—how it has been brought into its present condition, how it has been stocked, adorned and enriched with its varied tribes of plants and animals,—and how these have been developed, distributed and provided for must be accepted by every intelligent theist, as enlarging and correcting human views as to God's ways of working, and consequently as to His wisdom,' (pp. 54-55). Dr. Flint. however, admits: "I do not believe, indeed, that we shall find out any obsolutely new truth about God." (p. 53) Evolution presupposes existing germs. These germs are what we find in the Vedas.

ever alternative he thinks more reasonable. But on whichever side his choice may be, we hope, enough has been said to prove that the Vedas are the ultimate source to which all religious knowledge can be traced. To our mind the second alternative seems opposed to the whole course of the history of religion. We can now repeat the words of H. P. Blavatsky already quoted: "There never was a religious founder, whether Aryan, Semitic or Turanian' who had *invented* a new religion, or revealed a new truth. These founders are all *transmitters*, not original teachers." Who is then the *original teacher* of religion? Who except God about whom the great Patanjali says: **स पूर्वेषामपि गुरुः कालेनानवच्छेदात्** " He is the teacher of even the most ancient Rishis, being not limited by time."*

We have followed up the stream of religion along the diverse main channels in which it flows or has flowed in successive ages. The *Koran* and the *Bible* lead us to the *Zend Avesta*, and the latter on to the *Vedas*. Thence we can proceed no further and find the stream merging itself into the perpetual snows which descend from heavens.

Are we then not justified in saying that *the Vedas are* THE FOUNTAIN HEAD-OF RELIGION?

---

* Yoga Sutra I, (i). 26.

Appendix I.

"Was the Universe Created out of Nothing"?

A REPLY.

A personal friend has under the *non de plume* of "A Lover of Truth" contributed to the *Muslim Review* a series of articles entitled "Thoughts on the Fountainhead of Religion" as a criticism on my book of that name, which first appeared by instalments in the *Vedic Magazine*. So far as the subject of my book is concerned the series is yet far from complete, though six articles have so far appeared. One of these articles headed "The Interpretation of the Vedas" had little or nothing to do with the subject of my book, but was a general attack on the position of the Arya Samaj in respect of Swami Dayanand's interpretation of the Vedas. It has been already replied to by my learned friend, Pundit Ghasi Ram, M. A. L. L. B., in the *Vedic Magazine* of Asarh 1968. Two other articles which appeared in the *Muslim Review* of December 1910 and April 1911, are intended to controvert the Vedic doctrine of *eternity of matter and souls*, which though having no essential connection with the argument of my book, has been incidentally referred to on pages 119—123 of the *Fountainhead of Religion*. It is the first of these two articles headed "Is the universe created out of something?" to which I attempt a reply in the present article.

My friend begins thus :

"Our Arya friends hold and our author alleges ..... that this universe could not have been created out of nothing, that to create *a thing out of nothing* is an impossibility. I say on the contrary that *to create a thing* out of any *existing thing* is not only an *impossibility* but a *contradiction in terms*. If a thing is *created* at all, it must be created out of *nothing*, or it is not created at all. If creation means any thing it means *creation* out of *nothing*, or it means nothing at all." The Italics are his own.

He then proceeds to say that :

If our souls and matter are self-existent and co-eternal with God, "there is *no creation* at all. There is only at best *a making* like that of a potter, and not a creation."

This is at best quarrelling over words. The critic assumes that the word *creation* (with its cognate words *create, creator, &c.*), can be used in the sense of *creation out of nothing* only. In this he is quite mistaken. The word *creator* is etymologically the same as the Sanskrit word कर्तृ *kartri* which means *maker, doer, agent* or *cause* and is derived from कृ *kri* to do, make, or cause. The idea of *creation ex nihilo* is foreign to its etymological meaning. It is true that the English people, who use the word, being (as Christians) believers in the doctrine of *creation ex nihilo*, have come to use the word *create* in that sense. But it is wrong to say that the word is employed in that sense *only*. It is used in both senses; I will quote from *Webster's Dictionary:*

"CREATE, v. t.—to bring into being; to form out of nothin g ; to causeto exist.

(2) To effect by the agency and under the laws of causation to be the occasion of ; to cause ; to produce ; to form or fashion; to renew."

The second meaning is exactly the same meaning in which I have used the expression and we are certainly entitled to use it in that sense.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" then proceeds:—

"Every one would concede that the words *create* and *make* connote quite different and distinct ideas, and words connoting these two different ideas exist in every language, whether it be Greek or Latin, Hebrew or Arabic, Sanskrit or Pali, and these words have existed in these languages in all times and in all ages. Since the word *create* has existed in all climes and ages, and in languages all the world over, it follows that the idea connoted by this word is present everywhere and has been present since the very creation. Since this idea has been so persistently present everywhere and since

all time, the idea must represent a *fact, a reality, and not a myth, a fiction.*"

Here the learned critic has made a most sweeping assertion without the least attempt to prove it. Where are the words in all the different languages of the world connoting the idea of *creation out of nothing* pure and simple? I cannot pretend to a knowledge of all the languages. But it would be interesting if Mr. "Lover of Truth" were to endeavour to get such words from all the languages instead of quietly assuming them to exist. It has been shown that the English word *create* did not connote that idea originally, and does not always or necessarily connote it now. I know of no such word in Sanskrit. Whenever Sanskrit Philosophers speak of the idea in order to refute or discuss it, they have to employ a phrase or sentence instead of a word. For example, Kapila in his *Sankhya* Sutra describes it as *अवस्तुनो वस्तुसिद्धिः "production of a thing out of nothing." Elsewhere it is described as अभावाद् भावोत्पत्तिः "production of an existence out of non-existence." In *Gita* it is spoken of as असतो भावः † "existence out of what is non-existent." Nor do I know of any such word in Hindi. I am not aware if there is a separate word for this idea in Hebrew. But the Hebrew word *bara* used in the opening verse of the *Genesis*, which is generally translated into "created," means, correctly speaking, "cut, cut out, planned, or fashioned," which would mean 'created out of something,' rather than 'created out of nothing.' When the major premiss (that a word connoting the ideas of *creation* out of nothing has existed "in all climes and ages and in languages all the world over") turns out to be a false assumption, the conclusion (that the idea must represent a fact or reality) falls to the ground.

---

*नवस्तुनो वस्तुसिद्धिः "No real thing can come out of nothing"—*Sankhya Sutra*, I. 78.

†Bhagvad Gita, II. 16.

After "so much by way of preface," my friend proceeds to show, (as he thinks), that if *matter* be assumed to be eternal, God's agency in the physical world would be nowhere. With this end he has adduced some examples which are supposed to be the stock arguments of some materialistic atheists. Here are they:—

"A seed falls on the ground. If the ground is not stony or rocky or absolutely barren, and if sufficient heat and moisture are available, in short, if all the necessary physical conditions requisite for the growing of a tree are there, the seed would take root, germinate and grow into a big and shady tree, and would fructify in due course..... .....If it (the seed) possessed that power, the tree would naturally grow and there would be no agency of God in the coming of the tree into existence."

"Similarly we plough the land, sow it with different kinds of crops. Rain comes in time, and the crops grow. Heat and air help in the growing of our crops, and our crops ripen by means of the heat of the sun in due course. In all this nowhere the agency of God comes in."

This argument (if argument it can be called) tacitly assumes that the seed and the soil, air and moisture, the sun and rain, are self-existent, and self-sufficient things, requiring the agency of no creator or maker. It is ignored that they are themselves as much the works of an intelligent mind as the tree or crops which are produced through their instrumentality. It is surprising how quietly the learned critic premises a number of conditions, assumes that the ground "is not absolutely barren," that "sufficient heat and moisture are available, in short, all the necessary physical conditions requisite for growing the tree are there," that "rain comes in time,"—and then innocently says; "in all this nowhere the agency of God comes in"! Who gave to the seed that particular structure and composition making it capable of growing into a tree if certain physical conditions are fulfilled? Who made it possible for all these requisite physical conditions to be there? This process of germination

shows the wisdom and power of God quite as much as any other imaginable process by which germination could be accomplished. Again it is quietly ignored that this process is subject to certain *laws*, and that *a law presupposes a law-giver*; who must be an intelligent being. Mr. "Lover of Truth" gives some further instances and speaks of these *laws* of nature, but forgets that their very existence implies a *governing mind*. This is what he says :—

"The heavenly bodies are interdependent upon one another and are governed by physical laws, such as the Law of Attraction, and these laws are the results of the inherent qualities of matter. Governed by these laws the moon revolves round the earth, and the earth and other heavenly bodies round the sun, and our universe pursues its ordinary course without any interference by any outside agency. Day and night, the seasons of the year, are the result of the motions of these heavenly bodies and in all this God's agency is nowhere to be seen and cannot possibly exist."

Now '*Physical Laws*,' be it remembered, does not mean *Laws made by physical things*. It means the *laws to which physical or material things are subject*. It is absurd to think that the laws which require *intelligence* to observe and understand them could be evolved from dead matter or its qualities without an *intelligent mind*.

Continuing in the same strain Mr. "Lover of Truth" says :—

"The fire will burn and the water will quench the fire, whether God wills it or not; all the variations and changes, that are produced in our physical world as a result of the qualities of Matter and the Physical Laws that are evolved from those qualities and govern that Matter, take place independently of God's will or agency."

The writer here speaks of *Physical Laws* and *God's will*, as if they were *antagonistic* things; while in reality they are not even *different* but are *identical*. We speak of a *human law* as *the will of the sovereign power* in the state.

So a *divine law* (call it a *natural law* if you please), is the *will of God*, the supreme power in nature. *Physical laws* are only a branch of *natural laws*,—those laws which govern the physical world, as distinguished from *spiritual laws* which obtain in the domain of spirit. To say that '*governed by these laws* the moon revolves round the earth, and the earth and other heavenly bodies revolve round the sun," is the same thing as to say that these heavenly bodies revolve by *the will of God*, or in other words *by the agency of God*. It is therefore meaningless to say that " in all this God's agency is nowhere to be seen and cannot possibly exist."

It is necessary to state that when we speak of *God's will* we use the word *will* in a different sense from that in which it is employed when we talk of the *human will*. All human language when used for God is symbolical or figurative; more so is this the case when we employ for God expressions which are indicative of the faculties of the *finite* human mind. The moment we forget this we degenerate God to the level of a human being, (though it my be of a great human being), and our theism becomes rank *anthropomorphism*. God is not like man a being with a *will* which is affected by every fleeting passion or led by every passing whim or caprice of a changeful mind. *His will is immutable* as his nature is immutable. To say this is the same thing as to say that His *laws or the laws of nature are fixed and unchangeable*. It is therefore meaningless to say that "the fire will burn and the water will quench the fire *whether God wills it or not*." Fire burns and water quenches it *because God wills it* or in other words, because it is a law of nature. God cannot will otherwise, not because there is any limitation to His power, but because His will is unchangeable. It is a contradiction in terms to say that "all the variations and changes that are produced in our physical world as a result of.....the physical laws,.....take place independently of God's will or agency."

For what takes place as a result of the physical laws, takes place by God's will or agency.

Mr. " Lover of Truth" concludes this argument by exclaiming:—

" So God, after making our physical world once out of primordial Matter ceases to have any connection with the working of that world and *practically becomes* ' *Akarma*' as far as the working of our physical world is concerned."

The charge is entirely baseless. For according to the Vedic theory there is nothing at any time in this universe which does not show the agency of God. As the *Upanishad* exclaims:—

भयादस्याग्निस्तपति भयात्तपति सूर्य्यः।
भयादिन्द्रश्च वायुश्च मृत्युर्धावति पञ्चमः॥

"It is by the fear of His law that fire burns; it is by that fear that the sun shines: it is by that fear that lightning and air do their work, and fifthly death runs afar."

The most stupendous movements in the heavens which cease not for a moment are through His agency. And not a breath stirs in the atmosphere, not a rustling of leaves is to be heard, but there is the Hand of God visible therein. Thus God is always active so long as the universe or cosmos exists. It is only during *pralaya* प्रलय when it is reduced to chaos,—when nature sleeps for the time being,—that His activity is not visible. The charge of Mr." Lover of Truth" can be brought against his own theory. For according to his view *it is only in creating matter out of nothing that God's agency can be seen.* When that has once been accomplished, then according to him, "our universe pursues its ordinary course without any interference by any outside agency. Day and night, the seasons of the year, are

the result of motions of these heavenly bodies, and in all this God's agency is nowhere to be seen and cannot possibly exist." Again, according to the creed of our Muslim friends, God created this universe for the first time, and will not repeat the act after this universe has been destroyed. So before this universe was created, God was "*Akarma*" in every sense of the term; and after this will have been destroyed He will "practically become *Akarma* as far as the working of our physical world is concerned." While according to the Vedic theory there is a cycle of cosmic evolutions, one cosmos succeeding another without beginning and without end.

The last argument advanced by Mr. "Lover of Truth" in the article under reply is that if matter and souls are believed to be eternal, there would be no ground for our worshipping the Deity. Says he: —

"If we examine the question of worship and devotion to the Deity we find that such devotion is based on the following three grounds:—

(1) That we owe our living, our very existence to God and therefore in duty bound we lay ourselves in prayer to the deity who gave us our very being.

(2) That our worship of the Deity confers upon us spiritual benefits, that is our souls become higher and purer, and that by means of such worship an immeasurable improvement is effected in the qualities and attributes of our souls.

(3) That we worship God because he supplies us with our physical needs and comforts."

Then proceeding to show that according to the creed of the Aryas these grounds cannot exist, he says that the ground (1) cannot possibly exist as we are self-existent and eternal. Anticipating a possible reply he adds:—

"It may be said that though God has not created our souls He has joined them with matter, and has thus been the cause of our

present existence in this world, and therefore we owe Him worship under the first head. But the point is questionable. Many of us may be ready to question the right of the Deity to confine our free and independent souls in this prison of clay; but this topic will be dealt with when discussing the doctrine of the transmigration of souls."

Well, if any of us can question the right of God to put our souls into material bodies, can we not also question His right to call us into being? To create *dead* matter out of nothing is a different affair. But to bring into existence *sentient* creatures and to arbitrarily put them in varying grades of pain and misery, (although with some mixture of pleasure),—and in different environments, is a very different thing. And the question becomes all the more serious when it is remembered that the net result of their creation will be, (according to the creed of Mr. "Lover of Truth's" co-religionists,) that comparatively a few of these souls will, after a short life of mixed suffering and enjoyment, be sent to heaven, while by far the great majority will be sent to hell, for *eternal* damnation and suffering. Well may these latter question the right of God to create them out of nothing. The objection does not, however, hold good against the Vedic theory. For, according to it, the birth of a soul, the capacities with which it is born and the environments in which it is placed, are determined by God with regard to its deserts in the past birth, in the past birth they were determined by its actions in a still previous birth, and so on. The souls being eternal there was never a time when they were born for the *first* time. I will however deal with this question when Mr. "Lover of Truth" gives us his promised article on the *Transmigration of souls*.

As regards the ground (2) he says:—

"Similarly we being eternal all our qualities and attributes must be and are eternal according to our Arya friends. There can therefore be no increase or decrease, improvement or deterioration

in the qualities or attributes of our souls whether we worship God or not. God cannot add to, or subtract from, the inherent qualities of our souls."

This is equally erroneous. The "inherent qualities" of the soul are thus defined in *Nyaya Sutras*:—

इच्छाद्वेष प्रयत्न सुख दुःख ज्ञानान्यात्मनो लिङ्गम् ।

"Desire and hate, volition, pleasure and pain, and knowledge are the six characteristics of a soul."

These six qualities practically correspond to the three faculties of the *mind* described by Western philosophers, *viz.*, knowledge, feeling and will. That the soul is co-eternal with God does not mean that it possesses all the characteristics of God. No Arya believes that the soul is perfect like God. Mr. "Lover of Truth" says: "As far as the inherent nature of our souls is concerned, it will remain the same whether we spend our lives in the contemplation of, and devotion to, the Deity, or in the pursuit of the most beastly and licentious habits and never for a moment think of God or Godly things." This is true, and the soul will certainly retain its "inherent nature" or the faculties of feeling, desire and hate, pleasure and pain, of acquiring knowledge, and of willing, whether it worships God or not. But the "inherent nature" of the soul does not mean anything more than the faculties mentioned above. The soul certainly gains immensely in purity and holiness, knowledge and perfection, by worshipping God and this ground for prayer and worship holds good as much for an Arya as for the followers of any other faith.

As regards the ground (3) Mr. "Lover of Truth" repeating his old argument already refuted says:—

"Sun, moon and mother-earth by working together, guided by the laws of nature which have evolved through the inherent qualities of matter, supply us with food, drink and clothing, with houses to live in, with heat to protect our bodies against the inclement wea-

ther and above all with air to breathe. And in this God's agency never comes in.....We therefore see that as far as our physical comforts are concerned we get far greater benefits from sun, moon, earth and stars, and above all from matter, than we do from God. And as there is no reason for us to worship God except for the physical comforts which he bestows upon us we are as much, if not more, bound to worship sun, moon, earth, stars and above all matter as we are to worship God.....The condemnation of the worship of sun, moon, earth and stars by our Arya friends is therefore not only illogical but positively sinful.

Having already shown the hollowness of the main argument on which this new objection is based, I need hardly say anything about it. Matter and its products can be of no use to us unless—(*i*) we are provided with a material body fit to make use of them, and (*ii*) they are so made as to satisfy our needs. And who made them so, but God? No Arya believes that "sun, moon, and mother earth," and innumerable other things which minister to our wants are eternal or self-existing. God has made them for us. If a friend gives me some delicious fruits to eat and warm clothes to put on it might as well be argued that I should thank the fruits and clothes which give me pleasure and comfort, and not the friend who supplied me with them! And this is what Mr. "Lover of Truth's" argument really comes to.

In my next article I will reply to Mr. "Lover of Truth's" second article on this subject which appeared in the *Muslim Review* of April 1911.

Appendix II.

THE THEORY OF CREATION.

A REPLY.

IN my last article I replied to Mr. "Lover of Truth's" first article on the question of eternity of Matter. I now come to his second article on the same subject which appeared under the above heading in the *Muslim Review* of April 1911.

In this article he undertakes "to show *firstly* that Matter cannot possibly be self-existent and eternal with God, and *secondly*, if Matter be assumed to be self-existent and co-eternal with God, God could not possibly have made our present universe out of it."

He begins by recognizing a necessary principle :

"If we see a thing or phenomenon in nature there is absolutely no ground for us to seek for its cause unless we have reason to believe it to be an event, unless we have ground for supposing that it has begun to be, unless it has got the character of an effect."

So far so good. Then quoting from Flint's Theism he enters into an unnecessary disquisition to show that the universe constituted as it is, and consisting of the earth, the sun, the moon, the stars and other things, has the character of an effect, and is therefore not eternal. The Aryas do not say that the universe is eternal. This is what I have myself tried to disprove when speaking of the Buddhist theory, (*vide* Fountain-head of Religion, pp. 117-119).

Next he proceeds to show that the primordial matter also is not eternal. This is the real point at issue, He speaks of two "most accepted materialistic theories about the original state of matter" *viz.*, 'the Atomic theory and the Nebular theory', I may state that we believe in the *Atomic* theory,

and though from our point of view there is no opposition between it and the *Nebular* theory.

Having recognised the sound principle that only that thing which is an event or effect, which once began to be, has a cause,—Mr. "Lover of Truth" proceeds to lay down a criterion that what is "liable to change" is temporal and what is eternal must be "free from change". He then proposes to "test the primordial matter by this criterion". I challenge this novel proposition or criterion, if the word *change* is used in a broad sense including changes of outward forms which matter undergoes. It has not been recognised by any scientists or philosophers. Let me quote from Flint's *Theism* from which Mr. "Lover of Truth" has taken his first proposition which I admit to be sound:

"When we assume the principle of causality.....What precisely is it that we assume? Only this: that whatever has begun to be, must have had an antecedent or ground, or cause which accounts for it. We do not assume that every existence must have had a cause. We have no right indeed to assume that any existence has had a cause until we have found reason to regard it as not an eternal existence, but one which has had an origin. Whatever we believe, however, to have had an origin, we at once believe also to have had a cause".

Arguing on this line, Dr. Flint shows that the universe as now constituted is an effect. He concludes:

"There is no denying, then, that the universe is to a great extent an effect, an event, something which has begun to be, a process of becoming. Science is, day by day, year by year, finding out more that it is an effect. The growth of science is in great part merely the extension of the proof that the universe is an effect".

"But," Dr. Flint confesses, "*the scientific proof of the non-eternity of matter is as yet far from a complete one*". (The

italics are mine.) Such proof would however be not even required if Mr. "Lover of Truth's" criterion could be accepted in its wide sense.

Dr. Flint elsewhere says :

"Every existence, once new, every event or occurrence or change, must have a cause."

I accept this. But it should be remembered that "every change must have a cause" does not mean " every thing which is liable to change must have a cause". Mr. "Lover of Truth" evidently confounds these two very different propositions. When a thing undergoes a change that change is an *event* and has had a beginning. So there must be a cause for that change. It cannot be argued that the thing itself must have had a cause, unless it can be shown that the thing also once began to be. Matter is changed from chaos to cosmos. This change, (call it creation or evolution) must have a cause. Similarly it is changed from cosmos to chaos. This change (call it destruction, dissolution or involution) is also an event, and must have a cause. In the same manner changes are constantly taking place in the outward forms of matter while cosmos lasts. They must all be the effects of some cause or causes. But it is most unphilosophical to argue from this that matter itself must have a cause. Mr. "Lover of Truth" says :

"If matter is eternal notwithstanding the change that it underwent, our universe as it now stands is also eternal notwithstanding the changes which it undergoes. If this is so, God disappears as a 'subjective cause' of our universe."

The universe as it now stands is non-eternal, not because it undergoes changes, but because it began to be. Matter cannot be shown to have *begun* to be. It cannot therefore be said to be an *event* or *effect*; in other words, it is uncaused and eternal.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" then proceeds to the *second* point.

"If matter be an independent entity, self-existent and co-eternal with God the question would naturally arise what it was that gave God control over matter, that God moulded it into our present universe."

I would reply that the question cannot arise. If a thing is eternal its attributes are eternal also. For a thing cannot exist without its essential attributes. God and Matter both being eternal, their attributes and mutual relations are also eternal. Matter is the substance out of which cosmos is evolved, God is the evolver or creator of the cosmos. The former is the *material* cause of the universe, God is its *efficient* cause. Matter is controlled; God is the controller. This relation between the two is as eternal as they themselves. It had no beginning. There was never a time when Matter was not controlled by God. It cannot therefore be asked what gave God control over Matter. Has not Mr. "Lover of Truth" himself had to admit at the very outset that "if we see a thing or phenomenon in nature there is absolutely no ground for us to seek for its cause unless we have reason to believe it to be an event -- unless we have ground for supposing that it has begun to be." Well this control of God over Matter never *began* to be. It is therefore not an *event* or *effect*, and it is meaningless to seek for its cause. From times without beginning God has existed as controller and Matter has existed as controlled. God has evolved cosmos out of Matter, and when that cosmos has run out its full time of existence, has reduced it to chaos, has again evolved another cosmos followed by another chaos and so on. The cosmos and chaos have succeeded each other like day and night. This has been going on without a beginning and it will go on without an end.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" adds: "It is not possible for

us to conceive that one eternal entity would have control over another eternal entity without the intervention of a third entity. We cannot possibly conceive such a state of things."

After what I have said above I leave it to the reader to decide whether the doctrine explained above is really inconceivable. I can only say that it is the contradictory of it which is inconceivable.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" then raises a most queer objection.

"But let us suppose that God acquired control over self-existent and eternal matter ,in some absurd manner, still another question of equal difficulty would arise. How is it that God became acquainted with the properties and attributes of Matter? Since Matter and its properties are "eternal" and exist independently of God's will, and have existed since all eternity, there is clearly no means for God to acquire a knowledge of these properties."

I entirely fail to see how the qnestion arises. God's knowledge of the eternal properties of Matter is as eternal as God himself,—as God never *acquired* this knowledge. The question *how* He acquired it is therefore absurd. If Matter were not eternal, but had come into existence at any particular time, it might *then* perhaps be asked,—How did God acquire knowledge of its properties? For He could not have known it previously, as Matter did not then exist.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" then enquires about the cause why some people are apt to think that Matter is eternal: "The reason and the only reason that our friend or anybody else who holds this view can give in support of this proposition is that in our limited experience we don't see any corporeal thing come into existence out of anything. We grant this proposition, but ask in our turn whether in our experience we see mind, spirit or God produce any physical

change in matter. The answer clearly is that we do not. ..... Does any motion, change of motion, or cessation of motion, that we know of, take place in our physical world purely through the agency of mind or spirit." Mr. "Lover of Truth" would argue from this that our experience does not tell us that mind or spirit can produce any change in matter and that God could not therefore change chaos into cosmos. But I would entirely deny his premises. Inertia is, according to all scientists, one of the essential properties of matter, which means that matter cannot change its state of motion or of rest. All motion, change of motion or cessation of motion that takes place in the physical world is ultimately traceable to mind or spirit, either to the human spirit or to the supreme spirit. Mr. "Lover of Truth" says that the only moving power that we know of and that causes change or motion in our universe is "force or energy," and he adopts the view of some materialistic atheists that this force is "but a form or production of matter." This is a large question, and I cannot in this article undertake to disprove this fallacious view, nor is it necessary for me to do so; for Mr. "Lover of Truth" himself has not attempted to prove it, but has apparently adopted it as a convenient weapon (a very questionable weapon for one who himself believes in God) to be used against an adversary, I can only emphatically deny here that the moving force in our universe is a "form or production of matter."

Lastly Mr. "Lover of Truth" turns to the "theory of the Swami and of our Arya friends about the creation of this universe," and referring to the *Satyartha Prakasha* (though chapter or page is not quoted), he enunciates it thus:

"The entire body of matter or Prakriti was originally in a very attenuated लतीफ़ condition. God made it thick कसीफ़ and then made this universe out of it." (*See Satyaratha Prakasha.*)

We may accept this enunciation, though on account of its laconic brevity it is not very lucid. It is however strange that a man of Mr. "Lover of Truth's" literary attainments should have so far failed to grasp its meaning as to build a most fanciful argument on an absurd interpretation of the word "thick" used above. The word is of his own use, for apparently Mr. "Lover of Truth" has before him an Urdu Translation of the *Satyaratha Prakasha*, and puts its sense in his own English. This is the fine web of an argument which he weaves out of the above:—

"How could this most attenuated matter possibly undergo any change? How could it leave its original condition? How could it become less attenuated unless there were added to it something thick and sticky from somewhere else? Where could this something sticky come from? .....God clearly could not create this something thick and sticky.....If we have a quantity of water we may mix it in whatever manner we like, it will always remain water. We may go on mixing it for ever and ever, yet it will never leave its watery condition and will never change from liquid into solid.....How then does the original attenuated matter leave its attenuated condition and become gaseous, fluid or solid in its condition? We cannot conceive that God could possibly produce such a change in it unless he possessed some comparatively thicker material to add to it, and the thicker material was nowhere. It was therefore impossible for God to produce any change in the most attenuated matter and make our universe out of it.....If God really changed the attenuated matter into thicker substances.....He must have created this thicker material out of nothing..... The theory of the Swami and of our Arya friends about the creation of the universe, if true, necessarily implies the act of creation out of nothing."

It is hardly necessary to seriously criticise this argument. Mr. "Lover of Ttuth's" translation of the word

" sthool " स्थूल into " thick " is most unhappy and the expression haunts him at every step; while the use of the synonym " sticky " is even more extraordinary. It is a little strange that even the illustration of water used by himself did not suggest to him the true meaning of the theory which he criticises. Does not water become solid by being cooled, without any 'thick' or 'sticky' substance being added to it? And is not aqueous vapour similarly changed into liquid?

It is not possible for me in this short article to explain the Vedic theory of creation or evolution in detail. Briefly speaking before the evolution of cosmos commenced Matter was in a most rarefied सूक्ष्म state. It was first transformed into Ether or *Akash*. This is the first stage in evolution and is called the *Akashik* or Etherial state. Luminiferous ether which fills all space is in that condition. As the particles of ether come closer it is changed into gaseous state or *Vayu* वायु. This is the second stage in evolution, and this is which is called nebulous state in Western Science. As the nebula rotates and its particles come still closer, they collide, and heat is generated. The nebula then acquires luminosity and passes into the third stage called Igneous or अग्नि. It is in this state that the great luminary of our planetary system, the Sun, is at present. As its heat gradually passes out, the mass of matter loses its luminosity, but is still in a molten condition. This is known as the fourth stage or the liquid state जळ. It is in this state that our planet, the earth, was at one time. Its interior is still in a molten condition. As more heat is passed out the mass at last becomes solid or पृथ्वी. This is the last stage in planetary evolution. It will thus appear that Matter which was once in a rarefied or "attenuated" condition, has gradually passed into etherial, gaseous,

liquid, and finally solid state, or to use Mr. "Lover of Truth's" language, has become 'thick,' not by anything 'thick' or 'sticky' being added to it, not by the "creation of some thicker material out of nothing," but by the law of nature, of which we have experience in daily life that the loss of heat contracts bodies and brings their particles closer.

Appendix III.

THE FOUNTAINHEAD OF RELIGION.

A VINDICATION.

In my last two articles I replied to Mr. "Lover of Truth's" articles on the Vedic theory of creation and eternity of matter. In the present article I shall try to answer his first article (which appeared in the *Muslim Review* of February 1910),in which he offers a general criticism on the subject-matter of my book.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" begins with an expression of surprise that one who believes in the divine origin of Religion should hold that some religions are based upon others. He would expect such an argument from " an atheistic philosopher like Darwin or Herbert Spencer." I entirely fail to see the point of his argument. My position is briefly this: Religion is of divine origin and was revealed by God to man in the earliest times. It is embodied in the Vedas, the oldest books in the library of man. The various religions now prevailing are only different forms of that primitive Religion and what truths they contain are derived from, and are ultimately traceable to, the Vedas, having been handed down from age to age and from generation to generation. The stream of religion has flowed into the world from the Vedas as its fountainhead through the channels of the Zend Avesta, the Bible, and the Kuran. Whether I have or have not succeeded in establishing my position is another matter. But surely there is no self-contradiction or inconsistency in it, nor has Mr. "Lover of Truth," shown any.

The learned critic then says: "If the narrow view of our author and those of his sect, is to be accepted, it would naturally lead to two inevitable conclusions: (1) that God after revealing His will to the Rishis and Munis in the Vedic age, sat idle and renounced all further con-

nection with the moral government of the world; (2) that human nature is essentially perverse, that the highest intellects and the noblest characters which history knows of are not free from dissimulation and falsehood.

As regards the point (1), it is perhaps intended to be suggested that God should publish a new and revised edition of his will in every age or century. If I mistake not our Muslim brethren believe that Muhammad was the last of the prophets. If so, may it not be argued that after the advent of the prophet of Arabia, God "sat idle and renounced all future connection with the moral government of the world?" If finality can be claimed for the Kuran why can it not be claimed for the Vedas? The truth is that God's will is as unchanging as He Himself is. His *spiritual* laws meant for the moral guidance of humanity are as immutable and perfect as His *physical* laws meant for the governance of the physical world. They do not require to be amended from time to time like human laws. They were as necessary for the guidance of the earliest men as for subsequent generations. It is therefore only reasonable and just that God revealed His will to the earliest men. That he did so once for all does not, and cannot, mean that He "renounced all future connection with the moral government of the world." His will stands revealed for all ages giving light to all who seek it for all time.

In this connection Mr. "Lover of Truth" raises the question whether the Vedic religion was ever the religion of mankind or of a considerable portion of it. He remarks "From what we know from history we can say that the Vedic religion never travelled beyond the limits of India, and never crossed the forbidden seas."

Mr. "Lover of Truth" anticipates the reply that the Vedic religion being older than history we cannot from

the very nature of the case produce *historical* evidence to satisfy him. It is good that he does so. By this I do not mean to suggest that he should accept our position without any evidence whatsoever. I can hardly undertake to go into the question within the small compass of this article. But I will indicate the sort of evidence that is available.

The researches of comparative philology and comparative religion have shown that at a very remote time long before the dawn of history the forefathers of all the *Aryan* nations (*viz.*, the Indians, Persians, Afghans, and all the nations of Europe) lived together speaking a common language and professing a common religion. Their common name was "Arya," and they gave it to *Aryavarta* (India) as well as to *Iran* (Persia) and *Irene* (Ireland). I need not go into details and adduce proof on a point which is now regarded as established. The ancient language of all these nations bear a close affinity to one another, and numerous cognate words relating to every day life and also to the names of the Deity, point to a common source of their languages and religions. For some time the philologists believed that all these languages of the Aryan family were daughters of Sanskrit. Subsequently Sanskrit was dethroned from her high pedestal and she is now looked upon as the eldest sister, instead of mother of all Aryan languages. The theory is that they are all descended from a common tongue which is now extinct and which has been generally termed "Aryan" dialect. What this parent language exactly was nobody can specify, though attempts have been made to formulate it from the existing old languages. Those who are acquainted with the Vedic dialect (called *chhanda* in Panini) need hardly be told that it is as different from classical Sanskrit (called *bhasha* in Panini) as Sanskrit is from Pali or Prakrit or as the latter is from old Hindi. Our position is that

the Vedic language is the mother of all Aryan languages as the Vedic religion is the parent of all religions which prevailed in all branches of the Aryan family.

The relationship between the Vedic Sanskrit and other languages of the Aryan or "Indo-European" group is admitted by all. But a relation between the Vedic Sanskrit and non-Aryan languages is not easy to establish. In this article as also in my book, however, I am concerned with the relationship among religions. In Chapter IV of the Book I have tried to show that Judaism which is the basis of two other Semitic religions, Christianity and Muhammadanism, is itself based on Zoroastrianism, which is only another form of Vedism.

It is not impossible to give some instances of documentary evidence showing traces of the Vedic religion in ancient times in countries far off from India. In 1907 in the excavations at Baghazkoi in Asia Minor Professor Hugo Winckler discovered some documents among which was a treaty concluded between Subliebeliuma, king of Hittites, and Mattiwaza, king of Mitani (Northern Mesopotamia) about 1400 B. C. The treaty itself is in the Babylonian language but the deities of both the nations are invoked therein to witness the good faith of the two kings. The invocation by the Aryan king of Mitani is as follows:—

Ilani *Mi-itra* assuil ilani *Uru-w-na* assuil, ilu *Indar*, *Na-sa-at-tia* anna.

The reader need hardly be told that the invocation is to *Mitra*, *Varuna*, *Indra*, and *Nasatya* of the Vedas. *Ilu* is the Babylonion for 'God' ; *ilani* is its plural, there being no dual in the Babylonian language. *Mitra* and *Varuna* frequently occur together in the Vedas, and *Nasatya* is dual. The passage then means: "Witness the Gods *Mitra* and *Varuna*, the God *Indra*, and the Gods *Nasatya*.'

Professor Jacobi in an article contributed to the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, (J. R. A. S. for 1909, pp. 720-726) writes on the great importance of the above discovery, and says :—

"These five Gods not only occur in the Rigveda, but they are grouped together here precisely as we find them grouped in the Veda. In my opinion this fact establishes the Vedic character and origins of these Mitani gods beyond reasonable doubt. It appears therefore quite clearly that in the 14th century B. C. and earlier, the rulers of Northern Mesopotamia worshipped Vedic Gods. The tribes who brought the worship of these gods, probably from Eastern Iran, must have adopted this worship in their original home about the 16th century. At that time, then, Vedic civilization was already in its full perfection."—(*Ibid*, p. 723). Again he remarks : "I assume that the tribes in question (Kharri?) came from the East of Iran. There as we know from the Rigveda, Vedic culture once prevailed. And these tribes being neighbours and perhaps subjects of Vedic tribes, who had reached a higher level of civilization, adopted the Vedic gods, and thus brought the Vedic worship with them to their new homes in Mesopotamia."—(*Ibid*, p. 726.)

Let it not be supposed that the gods invoked in the treaty are Zoroastrian, and not Vedic. In the Zend Avesta the Vedic *Nasatya* becomes *Naonhattya*, *s* being changed into nasal *h*. What is more important, the Vedic *Indra* becomes in the Zend Avesta the name of a demon or evil spirit; and so is also the word *Naonhatya*. And though Mitra occurs, (as *Mithra*) among divine names, *Varuna* does not occur at all. The reference is therefore certainly to the religion of the Vedas in which all the terms appear as *divine* names.

It is pretty clear that at the time in question Vedic theism had degenerated into polytheism; for the invocation is to several gods rather than to one God called by several

names. On pages 159 and 160 of my book (*The Fountain-head of Religion*, first edition), I have shown that this polytheistic tendency was the cause of a religious schism among the Vedic Aryans, and many of those who protested against this tendency left India and migrated to Persia. For it has been proved that the ancestors of the Zoroastrians had first settled in Western India before they migrated to Persia, and the chief object of Zoroaster's mission was to proclaim the unity of God which had been obscured among the Vedic Aryas of that age. A religious schism naturally leads to some bad feeling. It was for this reason that the word *deva* which the Vedic Aryas applied to their gods, was employed by the Zoroastrians in the sense of demons or evil spirits, and some of their principal "gods," (like *Indra* and *Nasatya*) were similarly degraded; while the Vedic Aryas degraded the word *Asura* which the Zoroastrians used for their God (Ahura) and came to employ it invariably in the sense of a demon.

It is possible that the above treaty was written before the separation of the Zoroastrian from the Vedic Aryas. It is also possible it was written after the schism, but the king of Mitani belonged to the Vedic Aryas, and not to the Zoroastrians; for he invokes some gods which were degraded by the Zoroastrians into demons. In either case it points to the presence of the Vedic religion in Northern Mesopotamia about 1400 B. C. * In a footnote on p. 726 Professor Jacobi speaks of the Kassœans or people of Kassi who worshipped the Sun-god with the Vedic name of *Surias* सूर्य, and who conquered Babylonia in 1760 B. C. It is probable they were a colony from *Kashi*, the sacred and ancient city of India. With these

*It may be noted that the name of Mattivaza's brother and predecessor was *Tushratta*, (spelt as *Dashratta* by Prof. J. Kennedy, in his article in J. R. A. S. 1909, p. 1108), which is another form of Sanskrit *Dashratha*. His grandfather's name was *Astatama*, which also appears to be of Sanskrit origin.

instances Mr. "Lover of Truth" will I hope, modify his opinion that "the Vedic religion never travelled beyond the limits of India."

As regards the point (2) raised by Mr. "Lover of Truth," he says:—

"The sources of all these religions, (*viz.*, all religions except the Vedic,) were according to our author, human, and the founders of these religions must have known that the source of the inspiration was human; still none of these great personages had the fairness, according to our author, to acknowledge it, and each and every one claimed a divine origin for his Religion, and made his followers believe that the said religions were revealed to their founders by direct Divine Revelation. If our author's view be accepted each and every one of the founders of these religions must be convicted of the grossest hypocricy and dissimulation. Such a morbid, perverse, and humiliating view of human nature, both intellectually and morally, can be acceptable only to those.....who are committed to the theory that if their own religion be true every other religion is false."

This is a sad mis-statement of my position. In the first place I do not say that 'the sources of all these religions were human.' On the contrary I have tried to prove that the ultimate source of all these religions is the Veda which I believe to be divinely inspired, and that consequently God is the source of Religion, *i. e.*, of what is true in all the religions. What I have asserted is that the so-called founders of the Post-Vedic religions were really *reformers*, who drew upon the older religions for eradicating certain evils prevailing in their times and that they did not require any *new* divine revelation. My position is this. Religion being of divine origin, no human being can improve upon it. On the other hand, the history of Religion shows that it has a tendency to deteriorate owing to the ignorance of the masses or the selfishness of the priestly class. Whenever any particular truth has been

hidden we find that a great man appears to set things right. Thus I have already indicated that when the Vedic theism was degenerating into polytheism Zarathustra appeared to proclaim the unity of God. Later on, when the Vedic religion was degenerating into dead forms and cumbrous ceremonies involving thoughtless slaughter of animals, and when the hereditary castes came into existence Gautam Buddha appeared to preach the doctrines of purity of character, sacredness of animal life, and equality of mankind. In the same way, when Judaism had degenerated into mere forms, Jesus Christ taught the lesson of meekness and humility, charity and love being the essence of religion. When Christianity itself degenerated into a worship of Christ and Mary, Mahomed appeared to preach his stricter monotheism. Each of these great men strove to suppress some evils, and preached a religion which was in some way better than the then existing religion in which he was born; or he could not have attained the success that he did. But none of them could excel the excellent purity of the primitive religion of the Vedas as it was originally revealed by God.

But it may he asked (as Mr. "Lover of Truth" would ask): Were these prophets not guilty of "the grossest hypocricy and dissimulation," in as much they claimed that their religions were directly revealed by God? In the first place it is difficult to say how far this claim was made *by* them, or was subsequently made *for* them by their more zealous admirers and followers. In the case of at least Buddha we know it for certain that he never made such a claim, never even professed that he was preaching a *new* religion. Granting that some of these prophets did claim to be inspired by God it is not *necessary* for those who reject that claim to accuse them of 'hypocricy and dissimulation.' There is no question that they were great personages who influenced not only contemporaries but

also the posterity, whose preachings brought about the greatest changes the world has seen, whose careers stand like landmarks in the history of the world, and whose words have been believed as true and reverently followed by millions of men for these hundreds and thousands of years. I for one can hardly believe that any 'hypocrite' could achieve such marvellous results. Before you can convince large numbers of men of a truth, you must believe it yourself. Sincerity is the first essential of success in these matters. These personages must have believed in what they preached, and believed it deeply. Like all great men they were conscious of the mission of their lives, and believed in their personalities as destined to promulgate a truth. A firm and intense belief that the object of their life was to preach a particular truth might amount to a conviction that they had a divine mission or were divinely inspired. I have seen even some idolators entertaining a belief that they were in communion with the God whose idol they worshipped. Would it be improbable in the case of a great personality with a fiery heart and a fervid and deep faith in God?

It will thus be clear that it is no "morbid, perverse and humiliating view of human nature" that I have taken. Mr. "Lover of Truth" concludes by suggesting that I am among those "who are committed to the theory that if their own religion be true every other religion is false." Nothing could be farther from the truth. The whole object of my book is to show that all religions are one at bottom. Let me quote from my *Introduction*. "As these religions exist at present, they contain a mixture of both truth which is *divine*, and of error which is *human*. (I will add that they contain more of truth than of error; or they could not have satisfied the cravings of so many people.) But a careful comparison shows that in their essence they can all be traced ultimately to the Vedas.

They differ from each other on many points; but there are also truths and principles which are common to all or most of them. These common truths and principles are ultimately derived from the Vedas. And even those points on which they seem so widely to differ will sometimes be found to be the same at bottom, the apparent difference being due to a misconception or misconstruction of the long-forgotten truth of the Vedas on which they are ultimately founded."

In *every* religion there will be found men who hold that "their own religion being true every other religion is false," and Mahomedanism can hardly claim to be more tolerant than other religions in this respect. But such is not the teaching of the Vedic religion though men with such intolerant views will also be found among the Arya Samajists. It is however rather unfair and uncharitable on the part of Mr. "Lover of Truth" not to have recognised that it is one of the principal objects of my book to protest against this narrow, and bigoted view.

Appendix IV.

BUDDHISM AND VEDISM.

A REPLY.

In the last three issues of the Vedic Magazine I have replied to the chief articles of Mr. "Lover of Truth" which appeared in the *Muslim Review* under the heading "Thoughts on the *Fountainhead of Religion.*" There remain only two articles more which appeared in the *Muslim Review* of August and October 1910, and which are meant to be a criticism on Chapter III of my book treating of the Vedic origin of Buddhism. There is little in these two articles demanding a reply. I shall therefore reply to both in this article.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" complains at some length that I have not shown even as many points of similarity between Vedism and Buddhism as I have shown between Buddhism and Christianity. My reply is that I need not have done so. The relation between Vedism and Buddhism is much closer than that between Buddhism and Christianity, and is almost undisputed .It is as close as that between Judaism and Christianity on which point likewise I have been very brief, devoting only 3 or 4 pages to the subject. Christ, a Jew by birth, tried to reform Judaism as it then existed; similarly Buddha, an Arya by birth, strove to reform the Vedism of his time. In this connection it will perhaps not be out of place to quote from the more reasonable and sober criticism on my book which appeared in the well-known Christian weekly of Calcutta, *The Epiphany* (of 2nd September, 1910). Says the writer in the *Epiphany*:—

"The connection on the Semetic side of both Christianity and Islam with Judaism is patent and well known, so on the Aryan side is that of Buddhism and Zoroastrianism with Vedism, but the cross connection between Christianity and Buddhism, and between Judaism and Zoroastrianism are much more difficult to establish."

Mr. "Lover of Truth" then proceeds to give what he calls "some of the points not only of dissimilarity but of opposition between Buddhism and the Vedanta." It would be interesting to know what he means by "Vedanta." From his first point it appears he means the Neo-Vedant or Pantheism. Later on he confounds it with the Modern Hinduism or the Puranic religion. I never said that Buddhism is identical with or is based upon the Vedant or Puranic religion. On the other hand, Buddhism, as well as the Vedant and Puranic religion, take their rise from the Vedas.

The following are the five points of dissimilarity or opposition shown by Mr. "Lover of Truth":—

(1) "Vedantism lays down *all is God and all is I*, so that there is no distinction or *maam toam*, I and you .....Buddhism says, *All is not I*, and so stands diametrically opposed to Vedanta."

This, as already observed, is concerned with the *Neo-Vedant* not with Vedism.

(2) "The Vedic religion and all Indian thought attribute to human soul and for the matter of that to all sentient beings, a being without a becoming, an individuality without change. According to Buddhism on the other hand, there is no being, there is only a becoming."

Mr. "Lover of Truth" has not developed this point, and it is not clear what he exactly means, and from where he quotes. If he means that Buddhism denies the individuality of souls, the point is questionable. At any rate Buddha himself never *denied* the existence of individual souls.

(3) "Wedlock is a sacred thing in Brahmanism. *Grihasth Ashram* is a sacred duty under the Hindu system. One could only take exclusively to religious meditation after he had served his term as a husband and a father. Buddha did not recognise the sacredness of the marital ties, he did not recognise it as a sacred duty in an individual that he should serve his term as a householder before he betook himself exclusively to religious meditation. If religious life, the life of Bhikshu, is a good thing, any one could take to it at any

stage of his life, and if the desire were there any one could tear asunder at any time the family ties and could join the religious orders."

There is no opposition on this point. It is true that Buddhism gave an impetus to monastic *life* in India, and under later Buddhism monasticism became a social evil, and was one of the causes which brought about the fall of Buddhism. But there is no substantial difference between Buddha's own teaching and the Vedic doctrine on this point. Buddha did not enjoin monastic life for each and every person, and it is not correct to say that he "did not recognise the sacredness of marital ties". Nor does the Vedic religion prescribe a married life for each and every person. For ordinary men it is of course the rule that they should take *Sanyas* after having lived a married life as *Grihasthas*. But for exceptional men it is allowed to take *Sanyas* without having entered *Grihastha*. Swami Dayananda Saraswati's own life is a case in point. The *Brahamana* lays down:—

यदहरेव विरजेत्तदहरेव प्रव्रजेद् ।

वनाद्वा गृहाद्वा ब्रह्मचर्य्या देव प्रव्रजेत्॥

"When a man feels *Vairagya* (indifference towards the joys and connections of the world), he can become a *Sanyasi*. He may do so after having been a *Banaprasth* (recluse) from the *Grihasth* (married stage), or even from the *Brahmacharya* (student) stage."

(4) "Under Buddhism women can take to religious orders, can perform religious ceremonies for themselves and can learn and teach the Buddhistic Scriptures. Under the Vedic system religion must be learnt and taught by the sterner sex only, and among these too, by one caste only, *i.e.*, the Brahmans".

(5) "Buddhism tore asunder the bonds of caste which Brahmanism and the Vedic religion had so firmly established."

In the above two points Mr. "Lover of Truth" altogether confounds the *Puranic* religion with the *Vedic*. For according to *Vedism*, religious knowledge and religious rites are not a monopoly of any particular caste or sex. They are open to all without any distinction. In the *Yajur Veda* XXVI, 2, God says:—

यथेमां वाचं कल्याणीमावदानि जनेभ्यः।
ब्रह्मराजन्याभ्या शूद्राय चार्य्यायच स्वाय चारणाय॥

"I give this blessed word, the Vedas, for all persons, Brahmans, Kshattriyas, Vaishyas, Shudras." Does Mr. "Lover of Truth" know that among the *Rishis* of the Vedas—to whom the truths of the *Veda Mantras* were first revealed, or according to European scholars, who were the composers of those *Mantras*,—there are several females or *Rishikas*? It is to calumniate the Vedas to say that they forbade religious knowledge to women or to non-Brahmans,—as the latter-day Puranic Hinduism did. To suggest that the Vedas sanction the system of hereditary castes is to be ignorant of what even European scholars are now agreed upon. I would not waste the readers' time by saying anything on this point, and may refer Mr. "Lover of Truth" to my pamphlet on the *Caste System*.*

All that Mr. "Lover of Truth" has shown, thus comes to this that *Buddhism* is in some respects different from *Puranic* or latter-day Hinduism, or from the degenerate Vedism as it prevailed in Buddha's time. Nobody ever denied this. If it were not so *Buddhism* could not have become a idstinct religion. But this does not mean that the truths it contains are not derived from the Vedas.

In the second article under reply Mr. "Lover of Truth" means "to deal with the effects of Buddhism and the Vedic

* Published by the Arya Pratinidhi Sabha, United Provinces.

religion on their respective followers and that mainly from a political point of view." This has nothing to do with the argument of my book. Mr. "Lover of Truth" says :

"At the time of the advent of Buddha, India was not politically great, India was not counted in the Council of Nations."

He then speaks of the great Buddhist Emperor Asoka, and of his extensive empire. It is not correct to say that Asoka became a great emperor because India was then Buddhist. It would be more correct to say that Buddhism spread in India because a great emperor like Asoka made it the State religion. Asoka's name will certainly stand immortal in history for having made Buddhism a world-wide religion. As Mr. Vincent A. Smith says in his *Life of Asoka*, (*Rulers of India Series*) :—

"For about two centuries and a half prior to Asoka's conversion, Buddhism had maintained its position in a portion of the valley of the Ganges as a sect of Hinduism..... .....So far as we can see transformation of this local sect into a world-religion is the work of Asoka alone"—(p. 22).

As for the extensive empire of Asoka, Mr. "Lover of Truth" need hardly be reminded that it had all been won and consolidated for him by the genius of his grandfather, Chandra Gupta, who was not a Buddhist and had in no way been influenced by Buddhism. He it was who after the death of Alexander the Great repulsed his successor in the satrapy of Babylon, Seleucus, (surnamed Nikator or the Conqueror by reason of his many victories),—and wrested from him all the Indian provinces which had been conquered by Alexander the Great, including Afghanistan as far as the Hindu Kush mountain. Seleucus (henceforth known to history as King of Syria) also gave his daughter in marriage to Chandra Gupta, and sent to his court at Pataliputra as ambassador Megasthenese, the fragments of whose writings sufficiently show the splendour and glory of the practically still non-

Buddhist India. The only addition made to Chandra Gupta's empire by Asoka was the small province of Kalinga on the coast of the Bay of Bengal, which he conquered in the 9th year of his reign. "But" to quote Mr. Vincent A. Smith "the horrors which accompany war, even successful war, made a deep impression on the heart of the victorious monarch who has recorded on the rocks in imperishable words the sufferings of the vanquished and the remorse of the victor." It was after this war that Asoka became a Buddhist. Mr. V. A. Smith says :

"The conclusion is justified that the subjugation of Kalinga was the only great military achievements of the reign, and that from his 9th year Asoka eschewed military glory, and devoted himself to the problems of internal administration, with the special object of promulgating and enforcing the Buddhist Law of Piety.' —(*Ibid*, p. 18.)

I would be the last person to deny that the immediate effect of Buddhism on India was on the whole a great improvement not only politically, but also socially and morally. It should however not be forgotten that Buddhism was then n the prime of its life, while the so-called Vedism of the time was borne down with many evils which indeed had *necessitated* Buddha's reform. You may as well compare the strength of a man in the full bloom and vigour of growing youth with that of a diesased old man, as compare the social, moral or political effect of Buddhism in the time of Asoka with that of the Vedic religion immediately before Buddha's advent.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" says that after the decline of Buddhism "India again fell politically. It divided itself into petty principalities and chieftainships." I think it fell *along with* Buddhism, the moral and social degeneration which had set in bringing about her political fall as also sealing the fate of Buddhism in this country. Mr. "Lover of Truth" then

speaks of India's fallen condition in the Post-Buddhist period, and remarks:—

"Vedic religion succeeded in killing the freshness of life which was given to India by Buddhism, but could not infuse any vitality of its own into Indian life."

But was it the *Vedic* religion which replaced Buddhism in India and which Mr. "Lover of Truth" unjustly holds responsible for the degenerate condition of India? It was the *Puranic* religion,—a revival of Hinduism in a much worse form than that in which it was in the Pre-Buddhistic period. The un-Vedic Caste System which more than anything she had disfigured society in Pre-Buddhist India, and which had been for the time being suppressed by Buddhism, reappeared in a more rigid and complicated form,—with more numerous sub-divisions and greater inflexibiltiy. The new religion which took its rise on the decay of Buddhism not only revived the old evils but also borrowed many of the evils of later Buddhism. Idolatory was not known to Pre-Buddhistic Vedism, and is certainly of Buddhistic origin. Throughout the numerous excavations that have taken place in many parts of India, you will not find a single image of Hindu gods of Pre-Buddhist period. The oldest images are all Buddhist or Jain. When Buddhism declined and people gradually forsook it and adopted the Puranic religion, they, having been long accustomed to worshipping images, substituted idols of Puranic *gods* for the images of Buddha. Monasticism had been carried to extremes in later Buddhism, and had become the resort of the idle and the vicious; and the vast hordes of the able-bodied, idle, illiterate and good-for-nothing beggars, which are largely responsible for pauperism and poverty in India, are another legacy of the latter-day Buddhism inherited by modern Hinduism. Is this the *Vedic* religion? No, it is an amalgam of Buddhist idolatory, Non-Aryan customs and superstitions with, of course, a

mixture of Vedic teachings. It is as different from the Vedic religion as night is different from day, though the one comes out of the other.

Mr. "Lover of Truth" is very fond of confounding the *Vedic* with the *Puranic* religion. The endeavours of the Arya Samaj to show, that the two are different, are stigmatised by him as "pouring new wine into old bottles, and attributing new ideas about God and Religion to the Vedas."

It would not be possible to convince him of the correctness of our position by a reference to the works of Swami Dayananda Saraswati. I will, therefore, quote a passage from no less an authority than Sir William Hunter. The passage occurs in the 1882 edition of his celebrated book, *The Indian Empire*, which shows how far (unlike Mr. "Lover of Truth") the great historian, with that love of truth which generally characterises European enquirers, has not only adopted the position of Swami Dayananda Saraswati with regard to the relation of *Vedic* and *Puranic* religions, but has also furnished a historical explanation of the same. I shall make no further apology for quoting this lengthy but very interesting passage:—

"The Scythic inroads and the ancient Naga and the so-called aboriginal tribes, have, however, not merely left behind remnants of races in individual districts. They have affected the character of the whole population, and profoundly influenced the religious beliefs and domestic institutions of India. In the Veda we see highly developed communities of the Aryan stock worshipping bright and friendly gods, honouring woman, and assigning to her important position in the family life. Husband and wife were the *Dampati* or joint rulers of the Indo-Aryan household. Traditions of the freedom of woman among the ancient Arya settlers survive in the *Swayamvara* or maiden's own choice of a husband in the epic poems.

The curtain of Vedic and post-Vedic literature falls upon the scene before the 5th century B. C. When the curtain rises on the

domestic and religious life of Mediaeval India in the *Puranas* about the 10th century, A. D., a vast change had taken place. The people were no longer sharply divided into civilised Aryans and rude non-Aryans but into castes of a great mixed population. ....The Brahmans had indeed an esoteric or philosophical religion of their own. But the popular religion of the Hindus, that is of the Indian races who had 'come under Brahman influences was already in the 10th century' not the old Vedic worship of bright and friendly *gods*, but *a composite product of Aryan spiritual conceptions and Non-Aryan superstitions.* The position of woman had also altered for the worse. Husband and wife were no longer joint rulers of the household. The maidens own choice had fallen into disuse, or survived only as a court pageant; the custom of child marriage had grown up. The widow had been condemned to a life of privation or had been taught the merit of extinguishing her existence on her husband's funeral pile.

"The following chapter will exhibit *this amorphous growth popularly known as Hinduism.* Orthodox Hindus are unfortunately in the habit of claiming the authority of the Veda for their mediaeval institution, for the evil as well as for the good. As a matter of fact these mediaeval institutions, which form the basis of modern Hinduism are *the joint product of non-Aryan darkness, and of Aryan light.* The Scythic and Naga and the so-called aboriginal races with their indifference to human suffering, their polyandric households, and their worship of fear and blood have left their mark deep in the Hindu law codes, in the terrorising of the Hindu religion, and in the degradation of woman. English scholarship has shown that the worst feature of Hinduism, widow burning, had no authority in the Veda. When it is equally well understood that the *other dark features of Hinduism also rest, not upon the Vedic scripture, but are the result of a human compromise between Aryan civilisation and Non-Aryan barbarism,* the task of the Indian reformer will be half accomplished. *It is with a true instinct that the great religious movements of India in our day reject the authority of Mediaeval Hinduism and appeal back to the Veda.* For the Veda represents the religious conception and tribal customs of the Aryans in India before those conceptions and customs were modified by compromises with the lower races. At the end of the last Chapter I mentioned that a great reformation of Indian

faith and practice on the basis of Buddhism is always a possibility I should not close the present one without adding that *similar reformation is equally possible, and as a matter of fact, has been attempted again and again by applying the test of the Veda to the composite Hinduism* which forms the main common link between the Indian races."

The italics are mine. It need hardly be stated that "the great religious movement of our day" refers to the Arya Samaj. Does this not show that independent and disinterested European enquirers, who can in no way be suspected of a partiality for the Vedas, have come to admit that the evil customs and institutions of Hinduism, which are the cause of the degradation of Hindus, and which the Arya Samaj is so loud in condemning, are really no part of the Vedic religion? Does this not show that the modern Hinduism or the religion of *Puranas* which took its rise on the downfall of Buddhism, and which Mr. Lover of Truth" is anxious to confound with the *Vedic* religion is really "the joint product of Non-Aryan darkness and Aryan light," or " a compromise between Aryan civilisation and Non-Aryan barbarism." Sir William Hunter almost regrets the habit of " orthodox Hindus" to claim the authority of the Veda for their mediaeval institutions which form the basis of modern Hinduism. But what should we say of our educated Mahomedan friend coming forward to espouse their unjust cause, and dubbing this "amorphous growth" as " the Vedic religion," and then holding the latter accountable for the misdeeds of the former?

Appendix V.

THE INDIAN WITNESS.

The *Indian Witness*, a Christian weekly of Lucknow, published in its issues of September 10, 17, & 24, 1914, three articles headed "Are the Vedas the Fountainhead of Religion?—A critical examination of the *Fountainhead of Religion*", contributed by one Mr. J. R. Roy, Journalist, Lahore. The gist of the three articles may be stated under the following three heads:—

(1) "The Vedas are not the oldest books in the world", and "consequently they are not the Fountainhead of Religion".

(3) The Christian religion has not borrowed any of its teachings from Buddhism or any other religions.

(3) The Vedic theory of cosmogony is unscientific.

(1)—The Antiquity of the Vedas.

As regards the *first* point the writer refers to the archaeological discoveries made in Egypt, Babylonia, and Assyria, as pointing to a civilisation "which must belong to 5000 B. C., or even earlier". Thfs however proves nothing against my position. For we claim the Vedas to be far older still. Nor has Mr. Roy produced any evidence worth the name to prove the contrary. He quotes Mr. R. C. Dutt, (*Ancient Hindu Civilisation*, p. 10), to the effect that according to some astronomical observations recorded in a treatise on *Jyotisha* the date of "the final compilation * of the Vedas" is approximately 1200 B. C. Then he

* It should be noted that according to European scholars the Vèdas or rather their hymns were originally composed from time to time, and it was after a long period that they were finally *compiled* or arranged into the present *Sanhitas*. The date given above is alleged to be the date of the " final compilation", not of their supposed original composition.

quotes from Weber (*History of Indian Literature*, p. 2) who discredits the value of testimony of the above mentioned astronomical date. After giving these two quotations one of which stultifies the other, the writer strongly remarks:—"These quotations are enough for our present purpose"!

Later on he refers to Mr. Bal Gangadhar Tilak's theory that the Vedas were compiled 4000 years B. C. Mr. Roy has not noted from any of Mr. B. G. Tilak's books and has evidently fallen into an error in stating his views as developed in his celebrated work *The Arctic Home in the Vedas*. Speaking of the period 3000-1400 B. C. Mr. Tilak says: "The compilation of the hymns into *Sanhitas* also appears to be a work of the early part of this period"—(p. 454). But as regards the Vedic religion itself he says over and over again that "its ultimate origin is still lost in geological antiquity", —(*Ibid*, p. 457). He has proved on "strict scientific and historical grounds" that the Vedic religion existed among the Aryans when they lived in their primitive home in the Arctic region in Interglacial period. Says he: "It has been shown that Vedic religion and worship are both interglacial; and that though we cannot trace their ultimate origin yet the Arctic character of the Vedic deities fully proves that the powers of nature represented by them had been already clothed with divine attributes by the primitive Aryans in their original home round about the North Pole, or the *Meru* of the Puranas,"—(*Ibid*, p. 453). The Interglacial period according to him ranges from 10000 to 8000 B. C., when the Post-glacial period begins. But by this Mr. Tilak does not mean to imply that the Vedic religion is not older than 10000 B. C. He only means to say that it can be proved to have existed at least as early as 10000 to 8000 B. C., not that it began in 10000 or 8000 B. C. Nothing can be clearer than the following:—"All that we can say is that its beginning is lost in geological antiquity, or that the Vedic

religion is as old as the Aryan language, or the Aryan man himself.....We may however still assert that for all practical purposes the Vedic religion can be shown to be beginningless even on strict scientific grounds"—(*Ibid*, p. 458).

Thus even according to an authority referred to by Mr. Roy himself the Vedic religion is much older than the oldest date yet assigned to the Egyptian and Babylonian civilisation by any archaeological researches,—aye it is "beginningless".

It may be noted that the writer speaks of no literary relics relating to the Egyptian or Babylonian religions. He refers mainly to archaeological researches made in Egypt, and thus draws his inferences :—"On monumental evidence scholars are agreed that the Egyptian civilisation is the oldest, but a highly civilised people as the Egyptians were, could not be without a system of religion. Therefore the Egyptian, Babylonian and Assyrian religions and their literatures are the oldest in the history of the human race". If these conclusions are true it must be allowed that the religions mentioned above are also older than Judaism. But Mr. Roy seems to be afraid of his own conclusions. For in his second article he makes the bold statement: "The early parts of the Old Testament are older than the Vedas,—older even than the scriptures of any system extant." He claims the highest antiquity for the Egyptian, Babylonian and Assyrian religions, and would have us believe that some portions of the Old Testament are older than any scriptures.

Even the recent Archaeological researches made in Egypt, Babylonia, and Mesopotamia, of which Mr. Roy makes so much, go to corroborate the very high antiquity of Vedic religion. For example, some excavations made in

Asia Minor in 1907 unearthed a treaty of 1400 B. C. between the Aryan king of Mitani (Northern Mesopotamia) and a Babylonian king, which according to Prof. Jocobi proves that "at that time Vedic civilisation was already in full perfection", and the followers of Vedic religion ruled in Northern Mesopotamia. (For a full quotation on this point see Appendix III.)

(2)— OBLIGATION OF CHRISTIANITY TO OTHER RELIGION.

In his second article the writer says, "Mahomedanism owes, almost every thing to Christianity and Judaism, but the Christian religion is not under such obligation to any system." It is not at all intelligible how Christianity any more than Mahomedanism can claim independence of Judaism. If it be urged that Judaism is practically a part of Christianity, the Mahomedans can certainly advance the same claim in favour of their religion. The influence of Buddhism on Christianity is also potent as has been proved in Chapter II of this book. But Mr. J. R. Roy would not admit it. He says: "We do not attach much value to similarity in precepts. It is merely accidental." But it is not similarities of only precepts that I have shown, and I must repeat the words of that celebrated author Rhys Davids, already quoted on page 52. "If all this be chance it is a most stupendous miracle of coincidence, it is in fact ten thousand miracles."—(*Herbert. Lectures, 1881, p. 193.*) Then probably feeling the weight of the very close resemblance between Buddha's and Christ's teachings, Mr. J. R. Roy remarks: "In all probability he (Buddha) borrowed his teachings from the Old Testament." This is a novel position which, as far as I know, has not been heretofore held by any Christian writer. And a more unreasonable theory, it would be difficult to advance. There can be little or no similarity between the teachings of the Old Testament with its primitive and indictive rule of "an eye for an eye, and a

tooth for a tooth," and Buddha's sublime teachings of non-retaliation and forgiveness of injury. The similarity is between the teachings of Buddha and those of Christ, and it would have been perhaps less absurd, if Mr. J. R. Roy had stated that Buddha had borrowed his teachings from Christ, though the former had lived several centuries before the latter. Mr. Roy is very anxious to allow no outside influence in the development of Christianity, of which he says, "It has nothing in common with other religions." But such a devout and learned Christian as Max Muller has admitted and exclaimed, "And why should every truth be borrowed from Christianity? Why should not Christianity also have borrowed?" (*Gifford Lecture*, pp. 10-11).

Mr. Roy concludes his second article by showing certain points of contrast between Buddhism and Christianity. This is however pointless, for it was never my position that the two religions were iden tical. My position is to repeat the concluding words of Chapter II, "that Christianity owes to Buddhism that higher morality which distinguishes it from Judaism." I have stated in the clearest manner that "the doctrines of Christianity *have* little to do with Buddhism, having been taken from Judaism"—(p. 53).

(3)— VEDIC THEORY OF COSMOGONY.

In his *last* article Mr. Roy has attacked two points which are peculiar to the Vedic or Aryan theory of Cosmogony; *viz*:—(i) the doctrine of three co-eternal entities, God, Soul and Matter ; and (ii) the doctrine of an eternal cycle of Cosmic evolutions and dissolutions—(*vide* pp. 142-152).

As regards the point (i) Mr. Roy says: "Science does not believe in three eternal Beings." I do not know, if Science believes in any eternal Being. Perhaps it is not its function to do so. But if, as Mr. Roy says, "the word Science is used in the widest possible sense embracing all departments of human knowledge,"—if it includes metaphysics, or philo-

sophy, I would certainly join issue with him. For European or Christian philosophy is not *all* philosophy. There have been many eminent thinkers in India, Persia, China, Egypt and Greece who have believed in the eternity of Matter and Soul besides God. I need not speak of Indian and Zoroastrian writers who have already been quoted in the book. In Greece, Plato, Aristotle, Pythagoros, Parphyry, and several other thinkers held Matter and Soul to be eternal. In China the great Kwangzi held the same opinion (*vide Texts of Zaoism* (S. B. E. Series, Part I, p. 324). The doctrine of an eternal cycle is also indicated in Book XX where it is said: "What do you mean by saying that there was no beginning that was not an end?" Kwangzi said: "The change, rise, and dissolution of all things continually goes on." Again Tichtzu says:—"There is a life that is uncreated. There is a transformer who is changeless. The uncreated alone can evolve change. That life cannot but produce. That transformer cannot but transform. Wherefore creations and transformations are perpetual, and these perpetual creations and transformations continue through all time."

As for Egyption philosophers, Dr. W. M. Flinders Petric, D. C. L., L. L. D., F. R. S., F. B. A., in his work "Personal Religion in Egypt before Christianity," speaking of the *Perfect Sermon* (a work of 340 B. C.), says: "God is stated to be All in one, and one in All.....But Cosmos is one (a single entity), Soul is one, God is one," —(p. 53). Again he quotes from another work (*Corpus Hermeticum*, IX): "Cosmos is the second God after His mage that cannot die.....As Cosmos is the second God, so man is the third living thing after the image of the Cosmos"—(*Ibid*, p. 90).

Mr. Roy raises the objection: "Three eternal self-existing entities could never be brought into any relation with one another". The answer is that the relation between

God on the one hand, and Matter or Soul on the other, is as eternal as these entities are eternal. There was never a time when they were first brought into relation with one another. Mr. Roy further says: "How could they be embraced in a single act of knowledge? Suppose this eternal Matter to exist outside of God; how could it ever get to be known by God, or how could he ever act upon it seeing that its being is utterly apart from him?" It is not the Vedic doctrine that Matter exists *outside* of God. The *Yajur Veda* (XL, 4) says: तदन्तरस्य सर्वस्य तदु सर्वस्यास्य बाह्यतः "God is inside all this universe; He is also outside all this." Though God is inside and outside everything, there is nothing which is outside God. The *Atharva Veda* (IV, 16) says: उत यो यामति सप्तात् परस्तान्न समुच्यातै वरुण-स्य राज्ञः "He who should flee far beyond the sky, even he woul not go outside or beyond *Varuna*, the king."

On the other point, Mr. Roy says: "Philosophically the doctrine of eternal succession of cycles of existence, is simply inconcievable, and reason compels us positively to reject it as self-contradictory." It would be useless to re-state the doctrine which has been explained at some length in Chapter V (pp. 142—152). Briefly speaking it means that from times without beginning the eternal God has been evolving the universe out of the eternal Matter. A universe or cosmos lasts for a period, and is then followed by a dissolution which is followed by another evolution, and so on without end. Mr. J. R. Roy has pointed out no self-contradiction in this doctrine. As for the charge of being inconcievable, the doctrine is not only perfectly concievable, but is far more reasonable than the other theory that the present universe was created by God out of nothing at a particular time, and will again vanish into nothing at another time, and that as there was no universe before its creation, there will be none after its annihilation.

INDEX.

Abbreviations.

B ... ...According to Buddhism.
J ... ... ,, Judaism.
M ... ... ,, Mahommedanism
X ... ... ,, Christianity.
V ... ... ,, Vedism.
Z ... ... ,, Zoroastrianism.
Z.A. ... ... Zend Avesta.

A

B

C

H

I

J

K

L

Q

R

S

PAGE.

T

U

V

W

X

Y

PAGE.

Z

The Fountain-head of Religion

BEING

A comparative study of the principal Religions of the world (Mahommedanism, Christianity, Buddhism, Judaism, Zoroastrianism and Vedism), and a manifestation of their common origin from the Vedas

BY

GANGA PRASAD, M.A., M.R.A.S.,

OF THE PROVINCIAL CIVIL SERVICE, U.P., LATE PROFESSOR OF MEERUT COLLEGE.

Printed on good paper at the **Star Press Allahabad.** *Neatly got up. Demi 8vo, 250 pages. Price Rupee one only.*

A few extracts from Press opinions

1. *The Arya Patrika, Lahore,* April 9, 1919—" * * * A book of a very high order. In fact we will be indulging in no exaggeration when we say that it is *the* book in English which, after the works of Pandit Guru Datta, can be placed in the hands of English-knowing non-Arya-Samajists as showing them the grandeur of the Vedic Dharma. Pandit Ganga Prasad has bestowed a good deal of labour and research upon this work. The greatest virtue of the book is that its tone is free from any bitterness or ascerbity."

2. *The D. A.-V. College Union Magazine, Lahore,* September and October, 1910—"The learned author.....has, it must be cheerfully confessed, performed his self-imposed task most creditably and in a scholarly fashion, having (to our thinking) conclusively made up his position.....The book is written in a catholic, un-acrimonious spirit and we are perfectly at one with the author when he says that "the object of the book is not to criticise (in a captious spirit) any particular religion or religions, but to show the relationship existing among them by disclosing their common origin from the Vedic teaching." The get-up of the book is highly praiseworthy, and the price Re. 1-4-0 a copy, (it is only Re. 1-0-0 in fact) moderate."

3. *Sad-dharma Pracharak, Kangri* Edited by L. Munshi Ram) May 11, 1910—"Excepting Pandit Guru Datta's works there was yet no book in English which could be placed in the hands of English-knowing enquirers to show them the superiority of the Vedic religion; and Pandit Guru Datta's writings did not appear in any consecutive order. Pandit Ganga Prasad's book has made up for this deficiency.

Those Aryas who love their religion and who desire that the happy message of the Vedic religion may reach all mankind should supply a copy of this book to every English-knowing christian, Mahommedan, Jain, Buddhist, and Parsi, so that all may know that they have to re-trace many a step in their search after peace."—Translated.)

4. *The Leader*, *Allahabad*, January 20, 1910—'Mr. Ganga Prasad, M.A., of the Provincial Civil S rvice of Agra and Oudh, has rendered yeoman service to his country and religion by the compilation of thislittle book. He deserves our hearty congratulations and gratitude. Up to this time it was accepted on all hands that the Vedas are the oldest books on Theology. Mr. Ganga Prasad has tried to show, and has to a considerable extent succeeded in showing that the Vedic religion is the fountain-head or source of all the existing religions of the world, and that the so-called founders of these religions were only religious reformers whose mission was to remove the defects that had crept into the ancient Vedic religion through misunderstanding and misguidance, and to preserve its purity..... Thus the author has shown that in the begi..n ing of the world if there was any religion it was Vedism, and all other religions sprang up from it. He describes the Vedic religion as the source of Theology, of which other religions are only the branches, and their purity can never excel the excellent purity of the source. He proves that religion is from God, not from man, and so human understanding and human intelligence cannot improve upon the first monotheism preached in the Vedas. Whenever this pure monotheism was defiled on account of human misunderstanding and misguidance, so as to become unfit for satisfying the religious cravings of mankind, the necessity brought into existence some reformer or other to remove the defilement, so far as he could, by his human contrivance, and to restore the religion to its primeval purity; and thereby help to preserve peace and righteousness in this world. But as human knowledge is always defective, no reformer has ever reached the prime purity of Divine inspiration revealed in the Vedas. What a happy idea, and what a peaceful mission."

5. *The Daily Indu of Bombay*. July 4. 1910—"Impartial enquirers into and dispassionate critics of the chief great religions of the world have observed that however much doctrines and dogmas, and forms and ceremonials, preached and observed by the followers of these great religions may vary, the basic principle of all are identical. There is a striking similarity in the intimate truths, inccaulted by them all so much so that unbiassed searchers after

truth are irresistibly led to the belief that all the great religions of the world must have had a common origin from which they must have taken their inspirations to suit time and environments, Mr. Ganga Prasad. M.A. M.R.A.S., of the Provincial Civil Service of the United Provinces of Agra and Oudh. has brought out a book on the subject of a common origin of all religion. The "Fountain-head of Religion." as the book is styled, makes an attempt to show this common origin and traces all religions, f om the most modern to the older ones, to the religion of the Vedas which he designates "The Fountain-head of Religion"

6. *The Indian Social Reformer, Bombay*, April 17, 1910—"The writer, it is evident, has devoted much time and labour to the study of books bearing on his thesis."

7. *The Epiphany, Calcutta*, (a well-known Christian paper), April 2, 1910—"Mr. Ganga Prasad has made a very interesting little contribution to the study of Comparative Religion, in which he attempts with much conviction to persuade us that Islam is based on Judaism, Judaism on Zoroastrianism, Christianity on Judaism, and Buddhism and Zoroastrianism alike on Vedism, which last is, therefore, the true source and fountain-head of all religions.....But apart from such so-called coincidences as these, we are confronted with certain resemblances running through nearly all religions which are sufficiently remarkable to challenge students of Comparative Religion to account for them, and Mr. Ganga Prasad deserves our gratitude for raising the question though we cannot agree with his conclusion. .....We may well suppose that God cherished the germs of spiritual understanding and sought to develop a chosen race in India too.....But though perfected in Palestine at the junction of the East and the West, where is the marvel that in India too and in Persia and in Arabia much of the revelation has been apprehended and that the forms of its expression have much in common.".....

8. *Sanjh Bartman, Bombay*, (a Parsi Daily paper) September 1, 1910—"The book entitled the 'Fountain-head of Religion' may be found to be useful to students of Comparative Religions.....In so far as the various comparisons from all religions are called forth the author is all right, although the passages selected for comparison are also open to innumerable and varied interpretations." .....

9. *Copy of a letter, dated the 16th January, 1911, from Sriyut Babu Saroda Charan Mittra, M.A., LL. B., late Puisne Judge of the Calcutta High Court—*

Dear Sir,—Many thanks for copies of your books "The Fountain-head of Religion" and "the Caste system." I had

already read the former, and I have now read the latter. There can be no doubt that Judaism is the origin of Christianity and they are the bases of Islamism. I always thought that the Vedas had much to do in moulding Judaism and Zorastrianism. Your book proves them."

10. *Copy of a letter, dated 23rd January, 1911—from the Private Secretary to H. H. the Maharaja of Darbhanga, President of the Bharat Dharma Mahamandala, and President of the Parliament of Religions held at Allahabad in January, 1911*—"I am directed to thank you for your most interesting book "Fountain-head of Religion," that you have sent to the Maharaja Sahib H.H. finds it most interesting and will be much obliged if you will kindly send him six copies more."

11. *Opinion of Mahamahopadhyay Dr. Ganga Nath Jha, M.A., Litt. D., Professor of Sanskrit, Muir Central College, Allahabad* – "This is a thoughtful and suggestive book. It deserves to be read by all students of religions. If only every man realised this inter-relation among religions, much of the rancour and strife in this realm of thought would cease and make room for that real fellow feling and good will that should prevail among all who claim to be 'religious.'.....The writer of the book has done a real service to humanity specially at the present time when the most militant and rancorous hater of "other religions" is often looked upon as the most 'religious man'!

12. *Extract from a letter dated 19th January, 1912, from the late Dr. Satish Chandra Banerji M.A., L L. D., Prem-Chand Roy Chand Scholar, and Tagore Law Lecturer*—I consider Pandit Ganga Prasad's "Fonntainhead of Religion an eminently intresting book. A writer on theology cannot help dealing with controversial matters, but Pandit Ganga Prasad has expressed his views scholarly and well, and people caring for serious study will, I believe, read his book with both pleasure and profit."

13. *Extract from a letter dated 18th Febuary, 1912 from Dr. Rash Behary Ghose M.A., D.L., C. I E., Tagore Law Lecturer, and Advocate of High Court, Calcutta.*—The book shows in almost every page deep thought as well as culture, and I read it with great interest and I hope with profit.

14. *Extract from a letter dated 12th March 1913 from Dr. Sir Gooroo Dass Banerjee Kt. M.A., D.L., Ph. D., late Judge of the High Court, Calcutta.*—The book evinces great learning and much thought. From the nature of the subject it has to deal with controversial matters regarding which there is room for difference of opinion. But the book will he of interest not only to the student of comparative Religion, but to the general reader as well."

ओम्

Publications of the Tract Society of the Arya Pratinidhi Sabha, U. P.

	Rs.	a.
Satyarth Prakash (Light of Truth) ...	3	0
Caste System by B. Ganga Prasad, M. A. ...	0	6
Handbook of the Arya Samaj (by P. Bishen Lal, M. A.)	0	4
Agnihotra (Havan)	0	2
Swamantavya Amantavya ...	0	1
Vedic Vaijainti with Appendices ...	1	0
Niyam Sangrah	0	8
Sarchashme Mazahab	0	8
Arya Samaj kya hai (what is Arya Samaj) ...	0	1
Manushye Samaj	0	1
Suryasaptashwa Varnan	0	1
Bhajan Sangrah	0	6

The prices have been considerably reduced, the stock is very limited, the intending purchasers must order at once.

TO BE HAD FROM :—

(1) THE ARYA PRATINIDHI SABHA, *Bulandshahar, U. P.*

(2) GURUKUL, *Brindaban, U. P.*

(3) STAR PRESS, *Allahabad.*

(4) PRAKASH OFFICE, *Lahore.*